

### QUEEN MARY COLLEGE

(University of London)
LIBRARY

DA. 87.1

STOCK NO.

22804.

AUTHOR or ENTRY WORD

Laughton, J. K.

LOCATION

and SE. GALLER

TITLE

Nelson.

FUND

Hist

a30213 003523001b

# MAIN LIBRARY QUEEN MARY, UNIVERSITY OF LONDON Mile End Road, London E1 4NS

DATE DUE FOR RETURN

5 - MAY 2006

5 - DEC 2007 0 9 DE 2008 MACHON TONO





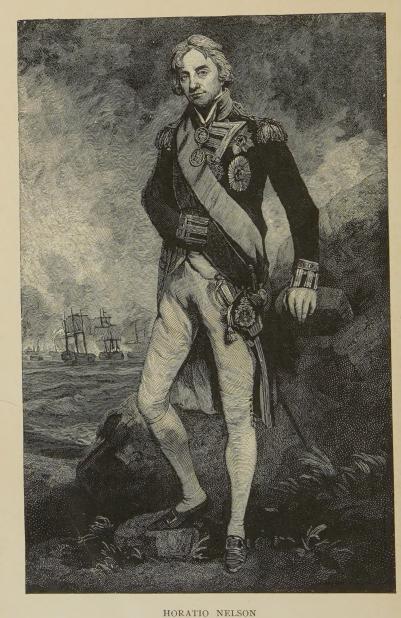


# English Men of Action

## NELSON



First Edition 1895. Reprinted 1895, 1904, 1909 Reprinted (Prize Library) 1900 Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2025



After the Portrait by J. Hoppner in St. James's Palace

22804.

# NELSON

BY

#### JOHN KNOX LAUGHTON

MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED ST. MARTIN'S STREET, LONDON 1909



#### NOTE

THE chief authorities for Nelson's professional life are Nicolas's Despatches and Letters of Lord Nelson (7 vols. 8vo, 1844-6) and James's Naval History, checked by ships' logs. pay-books, etc. etc., the official correspondence of Lord Hood. Lord St. Vincent, Lord Keith, Sir William Hamilton, and others, now in the Public Record Office, and by the French narratives in Victoires et Conquêtes, etc., Chevalier's Histoire de la Marine Française, and Troude's Batailles Navales de la France. For his private life the principal authority is The Hamilton-Nelson Papers (2 vols. 8vo. 1894), privately printed for Mr. Alfred Morrison from his splendid collection of original MSS. Many of these have been used by Mr. J. C. Jeaffreson in his Lady Hamilton and Lord Nelson (2 vols. post 8vo, 1888) and The Queen of Naples and Lord Nelson (2 vols. post 8vo, 1889). The account of the watering the fleet at Syracuse and the estimate of Lady Hamilton's public services here given, follow a discussion of these questions in The United Service Magazine for April and May 1889. The ponderous Life by Clarke and M'Arthur (2 vols. royal 4to, 1808), which has been the basis of all later Lives, can only be read with great caution, owing to the easy and uncritical attitude of the authors. Many of the anecdotes introduced in it are demonstrably mere galley-yarns, many are certainly incorrectly told, and many rest on very doubtful authority. But very many of the anecdotes in common circulation are derived from the Life (2 vols. 8vo, 1806) by Harrison, who wrote it to the order of Lady Hamilton, by way of magnifying her claims on the Government. It is not too much to say that the book is "a pack of lies," and that no one statement in it can be accepted unless it is independently confirmed from other sources,



#### CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

FAMILY AND EARLY S	ERVICE	•		0	۰	_	PAGE 1
	CHAR	TER	II				
North America and	THE WE	ST INI	DIES			6	24
	СНАР	TER	III				
Corsica	•			٠	٠	0	46
	СНАР	TER	IV				
THE GULF OF GENOA	٠	•	0	a	2	0	63
	CHAP	TER	v				
St. Valentine's Day				c			82

	CHAPTER	VI				
THE BATTLE OF THE	NILE .	,	٠	0		PAGE 100
	CHAPTER	VII				
Naples and Palerm			e	٠		125
	CHAPTER	VIII				
THE BATTLE OF THE	Baltic .		•	٠		151
	CHAPTER	XIX				
THE MEDITERRANEAR	n Command			,	•	176
	CHAPTE	RХ				
THE PURSUIT TO THE	E WEST INDIES			o		196
	CHAPTEI	R XI				
Trafalgar						208

#### CHAPTER I

#### FAMILY AND EARLY SERVICE

IN October, 1781, the fortunes of England seemed to have reached their lowest level. War abroad and faction at home had pretty well done their worst for a country ruled by jobbery and corruption. Lord George Germain, branded by a court-martial as "incapable of serving His Majesty in any military capacity," was Secretary for War; and the Earl of Sandwich,

spared by Fate
Only to show, on mercy's plan,
How far and long God bears with man,

was First Lord of the Admiralty. When experienced generals, pitted against each other by the insolence of the one, held divided command with no unity of counsel; when the noblest admirals, feeling neither life nor honour safe under the rule of the other, implored the King to excuse them from service, it is not to be wondered at that the results were big with ruin and dismay. The war against the revolted provinces of North America, assisted by France, Spain, and Holland and supported

 $\mathbf{B}$ 

\$

by the Northern Confederation, seemed as though on the point of ending in the utter subversion of the Empire. The drawn battle on the Doggerbank had shown us unable to crush even the Dutch; and the French victory off the mouth of the Chesapeake had ensured the independence of the colonies. And as if to mark the period, Lord Hawke, who twenty years before had raised our naval power to its greatest height,— Lord Hawke died on October 17th.

When on the 18th Horace Walpole wrote, "Lord Hawke is dead, and does not seem to have bequeathed his mantle to anybody," no one would have been more surprised than himself had he been told that the mantle had fallen on a little, insignificant-looking and badlydressed cousin of his own; a young captain, for whom family interest had procured early promotion, but who was still absolutely unknown, even in the Navy, except by the few commanding officers who had troubled themselves to think of the abilities of a subordinate. Many years, indeed, were still to pass before it was revealed to the world that Hawke's brightest attributes had descended to Nelson, and that the pupil of Locker, Hawke's lieutenant, was to raise the renown of the British Navy to a still greater height by a victory transcending even that of Quiberon Bay.

Horatio Nelson, fifth son of the Reverend Edmund Nelson, Rector of Burnham Thorpe in the county of Norfolk, was born at Burnham Thorpe on September 29th, 1758. The doctrine of hereditary transmission of genius seems to find but little support in his pedigree. On the father's side he was of a family of parsons. His grandfather, Edmund Nelson, was Rector of Hilborough in Norfolk; his father, also Edmund, was likewise Rector of Hilborough, as well as of Burnham Thorpe, Burnham St. Albert, and Wolterton; two of his brothers were clergymen, and two of his aunts, his father's sisters, married clergymen; all, so far as is known, most commonplace men, men who did their duty in their station of life, but without a spark of talent or genius to accredit their relationship.

The mother's side is more promising. Mrs. Nelson's father, also a clergyman, Dr. Maurice Suckling, Prebendary of Westminster and Rector of Wooton in Norfolk, was grandnephew of that Sir John Suckling whose early death may have prevented his reputation as a poet standing higher than it even now does. There had been other men of ability in the family. Robert, Dr. Suckling's grandfather, was Sheriff of Norfolk in 1664; Maurice, Dr. Suckling's son, the brother of Mrs. Nelson, served in the navy with some distinction, and when in command of the *Dreadnought* took part in a gallant little action which made some noise at the time.

In October, 1757, Captain Forrest in the *Princess Augusta*, with the *Dreadnought* and *Edinburgh*, all 60-gun ships, was detached by the admiral at Jamaica to cruise off Cape François, in order to intercept the homeward-bound trade on the point of sailing for France. The escort, however, proved stronger than was expected, and on the 21st, a day to be afterwards still more famous in the annals of the Nelson family, it put to sea in advance of the convoy, in order to capture, destroy, or drive off the English cruisers. It consisted of four ships of the line and three large frigates. When Forrest made them out, he summoned his two colleagues, Suck-

ling and Langdon, to a consultation which is said to have lasted just half a minute. As they met on the quarter-deck of the Princess Augusta, Forrest said, "Well, gentlemen, you see they are come out to engage us." Suckling replied, "I think it would be a pity to disappoint them"; Langdon agreed with him, and Forrest closed the conference with, "Very well then; go on board your ships again." And so forming line, the Dreadnought leading, the three ships ran down to attack the seven. A severe action followed, and after about three hours the French drew off, the English not being able to follow. They had twenty-three men killed and about a hundred wounded, many of them dangerously; their masts and rigging were cut to pieces; the Dreadnought had lost her main and mizen topmasts; they were in no state to keep the sea, and were obliged to return to Jamaica. The object of the French commodore, M. de Kersaint, was really gained, for after he had repaired his damage, his convoy was able to sail without molestation; but the credit of the action rested with Forrest and his companions, who had not hesitated to attack a very superior force, and had fought it without disadvantage.

Captain Suckling's mother, the wife of Dr. Suckling, was Anne, daughter of Sir Charles Turner, Baronet, of Warham in Norfolk, by Mary, sister of Sir Robert Walpole, K.G., for so many years First Lord of the Treasury, created Earl of Orford in 1742, and of Horatio Walpole, created Lord Walpole of Wolterton in 1756, whose son Horatio, second Lord Walpole of Wolterton, and afterwards Earl of Orford, was godfather and namefather to his little cousin, or, in strictness, his first cousin

twice removed. The relationship, though becoming distant, had always been recognised: the family feeling had been kept up; and it was the Walpoles that, by the presentation of Edmund Nelson to the several rectories of Burnham Thorpe, Burnham St. Albert, and Wolterton, had ensured a provision for Catharine Suckling's husband, as they had probably done before for her father and her brother.

About the name of Horatio there is a little to be said. Sir Edward Walpole, the father of Robert and Horatio, of Mary and another daughter, Dorothy, was the companion in arms during the Civil War of Sir Horatio Townshend, first Viscount Townshend, who was the name-father of Walpole's son Horatio, and the father of Charles, second Viscount Townshend, who married Walpole's daughter Dorothy. The name Horatio, which came into the Nelson family from the Walpoles, came into the Walpole family from the Townshends, to whom it came from the Veres, by the marriage of Sir Roger Townshend (father of Sir Horatio, first Viscount Townshend) with Mary, daughter and heiress of Sir Horatio Vere, Lord Vere of Tilbury, who was knighted by the Earl of Essex at Cadiz in 1596. And thus, though there was no known blood-relationship, Nelson was connected by the rites of the Church and old family friendship with "the fighting Veres," carrying memory back to the sack of Cadiz, and with Sir Roger Townshend, who was knighted by Lord Howard on the quarter-deck of the Ark during the battles with the Spanish Armada.

There is another possible, and indeed probable, relationship which would connect the Nelson family still more closely with early naval achievement. They had

been settled for many generations in North Norfolk, and must have intermarried with North Norfolk families, and among others with those from which sprang Shovell, Narbrough, Myngs, and Fisher, who were certainly related to most of the minor gentry all round Blakeney. It is no stretch of imagination to suggest that this relationship included the Nelsons; and that the aptitude for naval affairs, the genius for naval command which distinguished Horatio Nelson, was a reversion to the earlier type which first broke through the French line at Barfleur, led Rupert's attack on the Dutch off the North Foreland, or steered the Margaret and John into the thick of the Spanish galleons in the battle of Gravelines.

The family of the Rev. Edmund Nelson was a large one. It numbered eleven in all, boys and girls; but of these, three died in infancy, and four others before Horatio, three of them unmarried, the fourth married but leaving no child. Three were still alive at the time of Horatio's death: William, seventeen months older than himself, the companion of his infancy and of his school-days, his friend and correspondent through life, a clergyman, Prebendary and Vice-Dean of Canterbury. created Earl Nelson of Trafalgar after his brother's death; Susanna, born in 1755, who married in 1780 Mr. Thomas Bolton, to whose son the title passed on the failure of William's male descendants; and Catherine, born in 1767, who in 1787 married Mr. George Matcham and had issue. Mrs. Nelson died in December 1767, a few months after Catherine's birth, her eldest living son, Maurice, being then a little over fourteen, and Horatic just nine.

Of Nelson's childhood we really know very little. He himself has chronicled that he was at the grammarschool at Norwich, and afterwards at North Walsham, where a brick in the wall is still pointed out, marked with the letters H. N. Many years later Captain George Manby wrote that he had been Nelson's schoolfellow at Downham; but the recollections of an old man are not always to be trusted, and in any case, as Nelson himself did not remember it, it must have been for a very short time and in his infancy. It appears certain that North Walsham was his last school, and probable that he went to it in the January after his mother's death. As to the many anecdotes of his childhood, they have either been made to order, or are exaggerations of old family jokes. That he told his grandmother he had seen nothing to be afraid of, and that his grandmother repeated it as something grand; that he stole the pears out of his schoolmaster's garden, and jeered at his schoolfellows for not venturing, and such like, may be true enough, without being worth repeating: many a little fellow has said or done the same, and many a grandmother has asserted her belief that there never was such a boy. We approach the domain of known fact when, on November 17th, 1770, Captain Suckling was appointed to the command of the 64-gun ship Raisonnable, and on January 1st, 1771, entered his little nephew on her books as a midshipman.

Just then there was some excitement in the Navy, which had been in a state of dull quietude for the last seven years, since the Peace of Paris. The action of Spain in June, 1770, forcibly seizing the Falkland Islands and ejecting the English garrison, had disturbed this

repose. The Civis Romanus theory was in the air. Spain was to be taught that she could not be allowed to settle international questions in this arbitrary manner where England was concerned. Many ships were put in commission, and no doubt, on joining the Raisonnable at Chatham, the young midshipman heard a good deal about bringing "the haughty Dons" to reason. The haughty Dons were, however, sufficiently reasonable to understand that they had provoked a storm which they could not stand against unaided. France, whatever might be her goodwill, was not then prepared to support her with arms, and so Spain withdrew her pretensions and her troops. The English soldiers returned to Port Egmont, and the matter happily ended with the paying off of several of the ships which had been specially commissioned. Suckling was turned over to the Triumph, the guardship in the Medway, and took his nephew with him, this time in the rating of "captain's servant."

At that date there were two officially recognised ways for a young gentleman to join the Navy. One was as a midshipman from the Royal Academy at Portsmouth, after a two years' course of study; the other, and more usual, was as captain's servant, which did not and was not understood to convey any idea of menial duties, but simply of dependence. Nothing was more common than for the captain's son or brother, cousin or, as in this case, nephew, to be also the captain's servant; and as with his own relations, so also was it with those of his friends. The custom was as old as any organisation in the Navy; but towards the end of Queen Elizabeth's reign, when it was found that the privilege was abused, and that captains entered servants in excessive numbers,

a limit was fixed at two for every fifty or part of fifty in the ship's company; and so it continued, with scarcely a break, for two hundred years. It did, of course, bring into the service many officers of the best class; but it also added largely to the emoluments of the captain, who received the pay of his servants, their necessary expenses being provided for by an allowance from their friends. In a similar way, other officers were allowed to enter their own servant,—that is, to bring a young relation into the service, and have him trained, according to the custom of the time, as a "naval cadet." In a court-martial held in 1777, it was incidentally stated that the master's servant was doing duty as a quarter-deck petty officer,—that is, as a midshipman—and that the young man was the master's brother.

Besides these, the officially prescribed ways for a young gentleman to enter the Navy, a large number entered in some other irregular rating, as "able seaman" or midshipman. An able seaman was supposed to be, as the name implies, qualified to perform a seaman's duty; a midshipman was supposed to be a capable petty officer; and to enter a little boy, fresh from school or perhaps from the nursery, in either rating was an abuse which was not dishonest only because it was universal, and was known by the Admiralty to be so. Suckling's rating his twelve-year-old nephew as a midshipman in the Raisonnable was such an abuse; his rating him captain's servant in the Triumph was in strict accordance with the Instructions. What was not in accordance with the Instructions was the forthwith sending him out of the ship, lending him to a merchant-ship, while borne on the books of the Triumph for pay and victuals.

But this again was sanctioned by custom. Every admiral and captain in the service did it, and knew that it was done, and believed that there was no harm in it. It was not till seventeen years later that, in 1788, a check was put on the practice by the celebrated court-martial on Captain Coffin, who was tried on a charge of knowingly signing a false muster-book, four young gentlemen, borne as captain's servants, being therein declared to be present, when in fact they had never been on board the ship.

Clearly such a case, and it was the common type, was morally as well as legally wrong. For a very little boy to be learning his letters or even his Latin Grammar on shore while he, or rather his captain for him, was receiving pay and victuals as an apprentice on board ship, was clearly as contrary to the spirit as to the letter of the law. Suckling could at least have shown that his servant was learning the rudiments of seamanship in a rough but practical way. The ship to which Horatio Nelson was lent was commanded by John Rathbone, who had served through a great part of the Seven Years' War as a master's mate of the Dreadnought. and had passed his examination; but on being paid off, and finding neither promotion nor even employment in the Navy, had returned to the merchants' service, and was now master of a ship trading to the West Indies.

The voyage out and home would seem to have lasted about a year, and in July, 1772, the boy returned to the *Triumph*. The exact date, of which there is no record, was probably the 19th, when he was rated midshipman. He was now, he says, a practical seaman. No doubt he had picked up a good deal, including the swagger. "Aft

the most honour, forward the better man," he had learned to say, and to fancy himself all "heart of yarn and Stockholm tar." Suckling easily knocked this nonsense out of him; and yet it is possible that the consciousness of having once felt it remained, and gave him through life a sense of kinship with the fore-mast men and a marvellous power of winning their love and confidence. Meantime he was set to study navigation, and as a reward of industry was allowed to go in the decked long-boat, the *Triumph's* tender in fact; and so gradually, he says, he became a good pilot for vessels of that description in the Medway and the Thames, and confident of himself among rocks and sands.

In the spring of 1773, at his own earnest request, supported, no doubt, by Suckling's, Captain Lutwidge entered him as a midshipman on board the Carcass, then fitting for a voyage of Arctic discovery in company with the Racehorse, commanded by Captain Phipps afterwards Lord Mulgrave. The share of a boy not yet fifteen in such an expedition was of course very small; it is notable only as a part of the education which was forming the man; an education of trial and hardship, of seamanship and ready expedients. On their return, the ships paid off at Deptford on October 14th, 1773; and on the 27th, young Nelson, who had meantime been borne on the books of the Triumph, was rated as a midshipman of the Seahorse, a 24-gun frigate, being described on her books as "aged 18"; it was a way then in vogue, which often served to cloak gross irregularities.

The Seahorse was at this time fitting out for the East Indies, one of the squadron which sailed on November 19th, 1773, under the command of Commodore Sir

Edward Hughes, the same who afterwards fought five indecisive battles with M. de Suffren, in which pluck and goodwill held their own against superior science and disaffection. It is impossible to doubt that as the news of these actions reached him, Nelson, if only from his personal interest in Hughes, closely studied the details, and marked where Hughes, where Suffren had the advantage, and how tactical skill on the one side, or unity of purpose on the other, was singly insufficient. But this was nearly ten years later.

The captain of the Seahorse was George Farmer, who afterwards, on October 6th, 1779, commanded the Quebec in an unequal action against the French frigate Surveillante. The Quebec caught fire and blew up, with the loss of most of her men. Farmer, who had been already wounded in the arm, was last seen sitting on the cathead encouraging his men. In recognition of his bravery and good conduct, his eldest son, then a lad of seventeen who had been a captain's servant in the Seahorse, was made a baronet, and a pension of £200 a year was conferred on the widow, with an additional £25 for each of her nine children; in order (in the very exceptional words of the Admiralty minute) "to excite an emulation in other officers to distinguish themselves in the same manner, and render Captain Farmer's fate rather to be envied than pitied, as it would give them reason to hope that if they should lose their lives with the same degree of stubborn gallantry, it would appear to posterity that their services had met with the approbation of their sovereign." Such was the captain under whose care and discipline Nelson was placed as he was changing from a boy into a young man. He was fortunate too in his companions, with one of whom, Thomas Troubridge, a year or two older than himself, his later associations were peculiarly intimate.

On April 5th, 1774, Nelson was rated an "able seaman," and on October 31st, 1775, was again rated midshipman. It is not to be supposed that these changes made any real change to the boy, further than the trifling difference of pay, between three and four pounds a year. The number of midshipmen on board the frigate was limited, and the first change meant that, for some reason or other, Captain Farmer wished to give the rating to some one else, to his own son, in fact, the future baronet: when there was again a vacancy, it was given to Nelson. How little real difference there was appears from Nelson's own statement, that when he first joined the Seahorse, as a midshipman, "he watched in the fore-top," and in time, when an able seaman, "was placed on the quarterdeck." In the Seahorse he "visited almost every part of the East Indies, from Bengal to Bussorah"; but under the trying climate, possibly of the Persian Gulf, his health gave way, and on March 14th, 1776, the commodore ordered him to be discharged to the Dolphin for a passage to England. The kindness of Captain Pigot, he says, saved his life, and he seems to have regained his health by the time the Dolphin reached England. She was paid off on September 24th, 1776; and two days after Nelson was appointed lieutenant of the 64-gun ship Worcester, by acting order from Sir James Douglas, the Commander-in-Chief at Portsmouth. Captain Suckling was at this time Comptroller of the Navy, and the interest of the Comptroller was, in some respects, as great as, if not greater than, that of the First Lord of the Admiralty.

Nelson joined the Worcester on October 8th, and was kindly received by her captain, Mark Robinson, to whom he brought a letter of introduction from his uncle. Robinson took him to call on the Commander-in-Chief, and for the short time they remained at Portsmouth treated him rather as an equal and a friend than as a very young acting-lieutenant. He was a good and brave officer, and five years later, in command of the Shrewsbury, led the van in the unfortunate action off the mouth of the Chesapeake, where, by the loss of his leg and the severe damage sustained not only by the Shrewsbury but by all the ships in the van, he impressed a valuable lesson on Nelson's tactical studies. During the winter the Worcester was sent to Gibraltar in charge of convoy, and Nelson was gratified by being placed in charge of a watch, and by Robinson's compliment that "he felt as easy when he, Nelson, was on deck as any officer in the ship." On their return to England he passed his examination at the Navy Office, and the next day, April 10th, 1777, was promoted to be lieutenant of the Lowestoft, a 32-gun frigate fitting for the Jamaica station.

When Nelson joined this ship with his first commission, he received from his uncle, the Comptroller, a very remarkable letter on his duties as an officer; remarkable, as showing the low standard of order, when an experienced captain thought it necessary to point out and insist on matters of detail which have long seemed commonplaces of the service, such, for instance, as to see the yards square, the ropes taut, no ropes hanging over the side, and to be particular in working the sails together; "Nothing," he wrote, "is so lubberly as to

hoist one sail after another." The captain of the Lowestoft was William Locker, who had distinguished himself in the Seven Years' War, when first-lieutenant of the Experiment, by boarding and capturing the French Télé maque. He had afterwards, in the Sapphire frigate, been a witness of the battle of Quiberon Bay, and in March. 1760, had joined the Royal George, Hawke's flagship in the Bay of Biscay. Hawke took much kindly notice of Locker, who has left us a most favourable opinion, not of the great admiral's achievements, which are written in the history of Europe, but of his discipline and of his good influence on his own officers and on the Navy generally. Locker always regarded this as the happiest time of his service: "He was received into the personal friendship of his admiral, and, profiting by his advice and experience, he matured much of that professional knowledge which he had previously gained."

What Locker had received from Hawke he now passed on to Nelson. It would be too much to say that he foresaw the importance of his lessons; it is enough to suppose that, himself a good officer filled with anecdotes of the service and illustrations of former wars, within his own experience or handed down by tradition, he found in his young lieutenant, recommended to him in the first instance as the nephew of the Comptroller, a thirst for knowledge, a zeal for the service, a restless energy, which won on his heart and led him to treat his junior with an affectionate freedom unusual even now, but still more so in 1777. The great debt which Nelson owed to Locker, and through Locker to Hawke, has perhaps not been sufficiently recognised; for indeed it can only be recognised by considering what

sort of a man Locker was, a man who not only had been taken by the hand by Hawke, but who had made it the business of his leisure to collect a vast store of information respecting the service, a store which was afterwards the basis of Charnock's *Biographia Navalis*.

Of Nelson's service in the Lowestoft there is little to say. He himself has related one incident which is notable, not so much for itself as for the way in which he introduced the story and told it. In the last year of the century he was asked by M'Arthur, one of the editors of the Naval Chronicle, to furnish some notes of his life for the use of that periodical, and contributed a sketch, in the course of which, after speaking of his joining the Lowestoft, he went on: "Whilst in this frigate, an event happened which presaged my character; and as it conveys no dishonour to the officer alluded to, I shall relate it. Blowing a gale of wind and very heavy sea, the frigate captured an American letter of marque. The first-lieutenant was ordered to board her, which he did not do owing to the very high sea. On his return on board, the captain said, 'Have I no officer in the ship who can board the prize?' On which the master ran to the gangway to get into the boat; when I stopped him, saying, 'It is my turn now; and if I come back, it is yours.' This little incident has often occurred to my mind; and I know it is my disposition that difficulties and dangers do but increase my desire of attempting them."

What others may think of at least equal importance is his statement that, finding the frigate not sufficiently active for his mind, he got sent into a schooner, the Lowestoft's tender, and in her made himself "a complete

pilot for all the passages through the islands situated on the north side of Hispaniola." His later service did not indeed take him to those waters; but familiarity with ticklish navigation in one sea is the best teacher for similar work in others; and the youthful practice on the north coast of Hispaniola prepared the man for bold navigation in Aboukir Bay, in the Sound, or in the Lion's Gulf.

Early in 1778 Sir Peter Parker, at that time Commander-in-Chief at Jamaica, moved Nelson into the Bristol, his flagship, then considered as in itself a promotion. It was, at any rate, a certain road to it, especially on a sickly station like Port Royal. At that time all vacancies occurring on any foreign station were filled up by the Commander-in-Chief, and such promotions were generally confirmed by the Admiralty, or, indeed, always when the vacancies were caused by death When the vacancy to be filled up was a commander's, the admiral, as a rule, promoted his first-lieutenant; if it was a lieutenant's, he promoted the senior mate of the flagship. He kept a list of men whom, for family or other reasons, he wished to promote, and as occasion offered appointed them to the flagship in turn, each one as the junior of his rank, and moving gradually up till he became first and was in turn promoted. With such an appointment merit might occasionally have something to do, but as a rule it depended entirely on interest. Parker's quickness to discover the ability of the young lieutenant of the Lowestoft has often been spoken of. There had been no way in which Nelson could possibly have shown any; and though Locker may have been asked for his opinion of the lad (he was but

little, over nineteen), there can be no doubt that his chief merit in Parker's eyes was his relationship to the Comptroller.

In the present age of liberty, equality, and competitive examinations, it is difficult to realise that through last century, and indeed down to the middle of this, and even later, interest was almost everything; and that an admiral was more likely to promote his own kinsman, or the kinsman of a friend, or of some one who might, he judged, be able and willing to render him some equivalent service, than a mere nobody, however good an officer he had shown himself. There were indeed exceptions. During the great war Lord St. Vincent and, taught by him and his own sense of right, Nelson made many promotions dependent on merit and good service; but such conduct was even then exceptional, and would have been still more so five-and-twenty years earlier. Every one will admit that good service in time of war ought to be a paramount claim to promotion: even those who were the most notorious jobbers would have admitted it theoretically, though in practice they put it far from them; but failing a demand in favour of merit, which in time of peace does not always display itself very clearly, promotion by interest was, in some respects, not so bad for the service as it appears at first sight. For one thing, it promoted a considerable number of men at an early age, and there was always a possibility that among these there might be some man of ability and genius who would come to the front when wanted.

When promotion from the rank of lieutenant is regulated almost entirely by seniority, it is rare for a man to

Ī

be made a commander before he is thirty-five; more commonly he is verging on forty. With from five to ten years as commander, and fifteen or sixteen as captain, the defence which has been adopted against filling the admiral's list with old men is to retire all captains at the age of fifty-five; but for many of those who do become admirals it is a mere chance between promotion and retirement. Few indeed are younger than fifty. But during the greater part of last century, when lieutenants were frequently made at the age of eighteen and became captains before they were twenty, even though further promotion was delayed, they were still comparatively young when they got their flag. Boscawen was a rearadmiral and on his way out to India as Commander-in-Chief when he was thirty-seven. Hawke, who was not the son of a peer, was forty-two when he was sent out in command of the Channel Fleet and annihilated L'Étenduère in the Bay of Biscay. Howe and Jervis, of a later date, were involved in the stagnation of the list which followed the War of the Austrian Succession, and were respectively forty-four and fifty-two when they got their flag; but Howe was a captain at twenty, and even Jervis was one at twenty-five. Later on, again, promotion was accelerated, and Nelson became a rear-admiral when a little over thirty-eight; under the present system he would have been but a young captain, if not still a commander, at the time of his death.

His probation in the *Bristol* was not long. On December 8th, 1778, when about six weeks over twenty, he was promoted to be commander of the *Badger* brig, from which, after six months of uneventful cruising, he was further promoted on June 11th, 1779, to be captain

of the Hinchinbroke, a frigate-built French prize which had been brought into the service, and so named in compliment to the Earl of Sandwich. She was just then out on a cruise, and as she overstayed her time, much anxiety was felt about her at Jamaica. It was reported that she was captured; and when D'Estaing, after his ignominious repulse by Barrington at St. Lucia, his inglorious success at Grenada, and his discreditable retreat from St. Kitts, came to the Cape, where there were said to be upwards of twenty thousand men ready to embark and a large number of transports collected to receive them, people supposed that he might prove more enterprising against a defenceless colony than he had shown himself against a line of battle. Every possible preparation was made in Jamaica for his coming. The few ships were moored in commanding positions; all those in the neighbourhood were called in; batteries were thrown up on shore, and some seven thousand men were got together, five hundred of them in Fort Charles, under Nelson's command. It was a false alarm, false from beginning to end. The rumoured fleet of transports at the Cape was merely the homeward trade for France waiting for a convoy. There was no such body of troops; and D'Estaing, though under orders to return with the trade, yielded to the prayers of the revolted colonists and sailed for the coast of North America, in order to meet with another repulse at Savannah, after which he went back to France.

Meantime the *Hinchinbroke* got safely to Jamaica, and Nelson, having joined her, was presently ordered on a cruise for a couple of months. He came in again in the middle of September, having made four prizes which

he calculated would bring him about £800. At Port Royal he lived on shore with Captain Cornwallis, with whom he contracted a lifelong friendship. The fortune of the service did not bring them much together afterwards; but at a very critical moment in their careers, and in the history of the country, the two men were supplementing each other's work, the one commanding the blockade of Brest, the other of Toulon.

At this time Nelson was offered the command of a large Spanish store-ship, which had been brought in by Captain Inglis of the Salisbury, and was now ordered to be fitted as a 36-gun frigate. He declined her, possibly because in the Hinchinbroke he was appointed to the naval command of an expedition against the city of Granada on Lake Nicaragua. Unfortunately the season was too late by three months. Instead of arriving at San Juan in January, when the floods had subsided and the weather was fine, they did not arrive till the middle of April, when the rainy season had set in. The result was that the men, wet through two or three times a day, and exposed by night to pestilential damp and malaria, fell sick rapidly. The seamen seem to have suffered most. Their work was extremely heavy. Nelson claimed to have carried troops in boats up a river which none but Spaniards had ascended since the time of the buccaneers; to have boarded, so to speak, an outpost of the enemy situated on an island in the river; to have made batteries and afterwards fought them; and to have been a principal cause of the success; and his statement is fully corroborated by the official report of Colonel Polson, who commanded the troops. "I want words," he wrote, "to express the obligations I

owe Captain Nelson. He was the first on every service, whether by night or by day. There was scarcely a gun but what was pointed by him or Lieutenant Despard."

Nelson's energy and zeal long supported him, but at last he too was prostrated by the prevailing fever and dysentery. He was apparently in a dying condition when he was recalled to Jamaica by his appointment to the 44-gun ship Janus, and took a passage in the Victor sloop. He was succeeded in the Hinchinbroke by his friend Cuthbert Collingwood, who, though some ten years older, was only now promoted to the rank of captain. It gives a clearer idea of the virulence of the sickness to find that out of a complement of two hundred men the Hinchinbroke buried one hundred and forty-five; and Nelson believed that forty-five more died shortly afterwards. At Jamaica he himself lay for some time at death's door, his life being probably preserved by the tender care and indefatigable nursing of Lady Parker. He was still unable to undertake any duty, and on September 4th sailed for England in the Lion, with his friend Cornwallis. He landed at Portsmouth on November 24th, 1780, and went straight to Bath, the refuge of invalid naval officers all through last century. He was then so ill that he had to be carried to and from bed, in the most excruciating pain.

By the middle of January he wrote that, being physicked three times a day, drinking the waters three times, and bathing every other night, he was on the mending hand; and on the 28th he began to speak of being appointed to a ship. He had not yet, he said, quite recovered the use of his limbs, but had no doubt he would be perfectly well in two or three weeks. He

was, however, still in the doctor's hands through February; but by Monday, March 5th, he wrote: "I never was so well in health that I can remember. I have fixed to come to town on Wednesday or Thursday next," a fixture afterwards postponed till the following Monday. It was at this time that he had occasion to remark on the smallness of the fees charged by his physician, Doctor Woodward, and wished to increase the payment, to which Woodward replied: "Pray, Captain Nelson, allow me to follow what I consider to be my professional duty. Your illness, sir, has been brought on by serving your king and country, and, believe me, I love both too well to be able to receive any more."

The Bath cure did not, however, prove quite so well established as Nelson had thought, and through May he was again under the doctor's hands in London, where he was living with his uncle William Suckling, of the Custom-House, the Comptroller to whom he owed so much having died three years before, in July, 1778. On May 7th he wrote to his brother William: "I have entirely lost the use of my left arm, and very near of my left leg and thigh, and am at present under the care of a Mr. Adair, an eminent surgeon in London; but he gives me hopes a few weeks will remove my disorder, when I will certainly come into Norfolk, and spend my time there till I am employed." And this he seems to have done.

## CHAPTER II

## NORTH AMERICA AND THE WEST INDIES

In August, 1781, Captain Nelson was appointed to command the Albemarle, a 28-gun frigate, which he commissioned at Woolwich on the 24th. Like all of her class she had very poor accommodation. Nelson, however, wrote that he was "perfectly satisfied with her. She has a bold entrance and a clean run"; and again some months later: "She has some good sailing in The Argo, a new 44, we can spare a good deal of sail, and I think we go full as well as the Enterprise." But it was a marked feature of Nelson's genius to "think all his geese swans," and to believe his ship, as afterwards his fleet, the very best in the Navy. So also as to his officers and ship's company. In the Albemarle he found his "quarter-deck filled with very gentlemanly young men and seamen, an exceeding good master, and good warrant officers." A little later he wrote: "I have an exceeding good ship's company. Not a man or officer in her I would wish to change!" Then the ship's company were "as good a set of men as ever he saw"; Mitchell, a mate, was "an exceeding good petty officer"; Bromwich, a lieutenant, was a "very good officer"; the master was "the best master he ever saw since he went

to sea." It was needless to say he was happy in his ship's company, and "no one could be happier in their officers than he was." This was the first time, but the same or similar expressions were continually repeated through his whole service.

It is not necessary to suppose that Nelson was exceptionally fortunate in his officers and men. It is, on the contrary, a curious thing that only one officer of his training, Sir William Hoste, proved himself an exceptional man; Sir Edward Berry and Sir Thomas Hardy were good men, but not better than dozens of their compeers. Apart from Nelson, most were of a very ordinary type. With Nelson they were inspired, not by any care or pretence on his part, but by his genuine nature. Whatever was his was the best. The effect of this was that any officer or man coming under his command presently felt that his chief considered him one of the finest fellows that ever lived, and forthwith endeavoured, so far as lay in his power, to show that this flattering opinion was a true one.

Although in war time, the Albemarle's service was in no respect brilliant. A trip to Elsinore in charge of convoy gave Nelson some experience of northern navigation, which was to bear fruit in due time. In the spring of 1782 he was at Portsmouth and Cork, waiting for a convoy to the St. Lawrence, with which he sailed in the end of April, in company with Captain Pringle in the Dædalus, going on the Newfoundland station. In the end of May he arrived at St. John's, and there heard news of the battle of April 12th. After taking the convoy up the river he sailed on a cruise, from which, after an absence of ten weeks, he returned to Quebec

in the middle of September, "knocked up with scurvy, having for eight weeks," he wrote, "myself and all the officers, lived upon salt beef; nor had the ship's company had a fresh meal since April 7th."

The Navy had not then learned how to avoid this direful pest, but Nelson shows that he already understood the importance of fresh beef. Of that, and of the measures which during his long blockade of Brest Hawke had taken to ensure a full supply, we need not doubt he had heard from Locker; and we may be sure that Locker's teaching, now brought home to him by his own experience, was never afterwards forgotten. This was the real fruit of the cruise, more valuable a thousand times than the prizes which were taken but did not come in; more valuable than even his escape from the squadron of four French ships of the line which chased him in Boston Bay.

After a few weeks at Quebec, where the health of the ship's company was re-established, the Albemarle went to New York, and Nelson made the acquaintance of Lord Hood, who had just been made an Irish peer for his services on April 12th. Hood seems to have at once conceived a high opinion of the young captain of the Albemarle, and with the consent of Rear-Admiral Digby, the Commander-in-Chief in North America, agreed to take him with him to the West Indies. It was at this time, too, that Nelson was introduced to Prince William Henry, afterwards Duke of Clarence and King William the Fourth, who many years later said: "I was then a midshipman on board the Barfleur, lying in the Narrows off Staten Island, and had the watch on deck, when Captain Nelson, of the Albemarle, came in his barge

alongside, who appeared to be the merest boy of a captain I ever beheld; and his dress was worthy of attention. He had on a full-laced uniform; his lank, unpowdered hair was tied in a stiff Hessian tail, of an extraordinary length; the old-fashioned flaps of his waistcoat added to the general quaintness of his figure, and produced an appearance which particularly attracted my notice; for I had never seen anything like it before, nor could I imagine who he was, nor what he came about. My doubts were, however, removed when Lord Hood introduced me to him. There was something irresistibly pleasing in his address and conversation; and an enthusiasm when speaking on professional subjects that showed he was no common being. Nelson after this went with us to the West Indies, and served under Lord Hood's flag during his indefatigable cruise off Cape François. Throughout the whole of the American War the height of Nelson's ambition was to command a lineof-battle ship; as for prize-money, it never entered his thoughts: he had always in view the character of his maternal uncle "

Nelson himself, writing to Captain Locker from the West Indies on February 25th, 1783, said: "My situation in Lord Hood's fleet must be in the highest degree flattering to any young man. He treats me as if I was his son, and will, I am convinced, give me anything I can ask of him; nor is my situation with Prince William less flattering. Lord Hood was so kind as to tell him (indeed, I cannot make use of expressions strong enough to describe what I felt) that if he wished to ask questions relative to naval tactics, I could give him as much information as any officer in the fleet. He will be, I am

certain, an ornament to our service. He is a seaman, which you could hardly suppose. Every other qualification you may expect from him." As at this time Nelson had never served with a fleet, his knowledge of fleet manœuvring and naval tactics must have been entirely theoretical; and it is difficult to see where he could have picked it up except in conversation with Locker, with Cornwallis, possibly with Parker, who might serve as the horrid example, and more recently with Hood.

His coming to the West Indies, however, led to no results. The war was practically over; and except a casual and unsuccessful attempt in March, 1783, to retake Turk's Island, nothing occurred worthy of notice. In May the fleet was ordered home, and the *Albemarle*, being sent on in advance, arrived at Spithead on June 25th, 1783. She was paid off on July 3rd, and Nelson was placed on half-pay.

On coming to London, he was busy for some time "attempting," he wrote, "to get the wages due to my good fellows for various ships they have served in in the war. The disgust of the seamen to the Navy is all owing to the infernal plan of turning them over from ship to ship, so that men cannot be attached to their officers, or the officers care twopence about them." This is only an early instance of the constant care Nelson took of the interests of those under his command. They were as part of his family, and throughout his whole career to have served with him was a certain claim to his good offices; lieutenant, master, or seaman, he interested himself in all. This was no mere selfish policy; it was a true sentiment of the brotherhood of arms. But no policy could have been more successful; as he loved his officers

and men, they loved him, and the feeling spread till it extended through the Navy. On paying off the Albemarle, he wrote: "The whole ship's company offered, if I could get a ship, to enter for her immediately; but I have no thought of going to sea, for I cannot afford to live on board ship in such a manner as is going on at present."

And so in October, after a short visit to Burnham, he applied for leave of absence, and went over to France; intending, it would appear, to stay abroad for some time. He took up his residence at St. Omer, and while studying French, fell in love with a Miss Andrews, a daughter of an English clergyman there. In January, 1784, he consulted his uncle, William Suckling, who consented to allow him £100 a year so as to enable him to marry; and on the strength of that increase to his income, he seems to have proposed to Miss Andrews and to have been refused. It was not a thing that he was likely to talk about; but his letter to Suckling is dated January 14th, 1784, and on the 19th he was in London. something had happened to make him desirous of occupation is clear; for notwithstanding his previous resolve, he was on March 19th appointed to the Boreas, a 28-gun frigate, superseding Captain Thomas Wells who had commissioned her five or six months before. She was under orders for the Leeward Islands; but it was the middle of May before she sailed from Spithead, Lady Hughes, the wife of the Commander-in-Chief, and her daughter taking a passage in her, and Nelson's brother William going as her chaplain.

Of William Nelson in this capacity a very few words will be sufficient. He had previously wished to join the

Albemarle, but as his brother threw cold water on the idea, he gave it up for the time. Now, the opportunity of seeing the West Indies revived it, and though Nelson did not approve of his entering the Navy, or think he would like it, he consented to his coming. William Nelson, however, soon found that his health could not stand the climate, which might easily be disagreeable to a man of a full habit of body and self-indulgent temperament, as he was; and within a few weeks of the Boreas arriving on the station, he left her and returned to England.

For Lady Hughes Nelson conceived a strong dislike. From the beginning he thought he was imposed on in being asked to take her and her family out. "I shall not be sorry to part with them," he wrote from Madeira; "they are pleasant people, but an incredible expense." By the time he arrived at Antigua he seems to have been heartily tired of them, more especially of Lady Hughes, whom he curtly described as having "an eternal clack." Of the Admiral too he presently formed an unfavourable opinion. Sir Richard Hughes was a brave, amiable, and easy-tempered man, but not by any means an ideal commander-in-chief. "I do not like him." Nelson wrote, within a very few weeks after he joined the flag; "he bows and scrapes too much for me." And later on: "The Admiral lives in a boarding-house at Barbadoes, not much in the style of a British Admiral": and again: "Sir Richard Hughes is a fiddler; therefore, as his time is taken up tuning that instrument, the squadron is cursedly out of tune." This, however, was after, or perhaps in consequence of, a serious difference of opinion with the Admiral on two points of service, and a disobedience of his orders which marked an extraordinary resolution in so young an officer.

The first of these was a question arising out of the Navigation Laws, which, it will be remembered, placed great restrictions on foreign ships trading with British colonies. The people of the United States had become foreigners, but wished to retain the commercial privileges which they had enjoyed while they were British subjects. In this the island merchants were at one with them. The trade with the States was lucrative; they had no wish that it should be put a stop to, and approached the Admiral with a request to sanction it. Hughes, with easy-going carelessness, had tacitly agreed; but when Nelson and Collingwood (now in command of the Mediator) called his attention to the Navigation Act, he gave them orders to carry it into effect. Accordingly, when Nelson went to St. Kitts as senior officer, he turned away all the American ships; on which the colonial merchants again memorialised the Admiral, with such success that he sent Nelson an order not to hinder American ships from coming or going, if the governors of the islands chose to allow them.

The Governor of St. Kitts did choose to allow them, and on Nelson remonstrating with him, said that "old generals were not in the habit of taking advice from young gentlemen"; to which Nelson replied, "I have the honour, sir, of being as old as the Prime Minister of England, and think myself as capable of commanding one of His Majesty's ships as that minister is of governing the State." His reply to Hughes was a more serious matter; it was in effect that the order was contrary to the Act of Parliament, and he should decline obeying it.

Hughes, easy-tempered as he was, was very angry, and wished to supersede Nelson; but, on talking the matter over with the flag-captain, found that the general opinion in the squadron was that Nelson was right, that the order was illegal, and that they would not be bound to obey it. It accordingly became a dead-letter; but it was not rescinded; nor did the Admiral give Nelson any support against the attacks of the infuriated colonists.

He had seized five American ships, confining their masters on board; and while the question of the ships was under adjudication, actions for illegal detention of the men were brought against him, and damages laid at £4000. The ships were condemned; but Nelson remained a prisoner on board his own ship, subject to arrest if he was found on shore, and in the certainty that if tried he would be cast in the whole sum. Mr. Herbert, the President of Nevis, offered to be bail for him to the amount of £10,000, if he chose to suffer the arrest; and that too though the stoppage of the American trade was a greater loss to him than to any one else in the colony. Later on, an order came out for Nelson to be defended at the cost of the Crown, and so, for the time, Nelson's share in the business would seem to have ended; though for several years afterwards, new actions were entered and new writs issued. which, though always defended by the Crown, were meant to annoy and did annoy. But what perhaps annoyed most of all was the Treasury sending out their thanks to Sir Richard Hughes for his activity in protecting British commerce, while of Nelson's conduct no special notice was taken.

This question, which was as much legal or political as

naval, was still undecided when Nelson was again in difficulties with the Admiral about another of more technical interest. It was the custom of the Admiralty to appoint to every dockyard at home or abroad a captain of the Navy as commissioner or, as he would be now called, superintendent, and this captain was generally, if not always, on half-pay. At this time the commissioner at Antigua was Captain Moutray, a worthy old officer without much service and that of no great distinction; though he had come prominently before the public some five years before by having been, as captain of the Ramillies, in charge of a very large, rich, and important convoy which fell into the midst of the combined French and Spanish fleet off Cape St. Vincent. Moutray had been tried for carelessness and dismissed his ship; but there was a strong feeling that the fault was really with the Government for allowing such a valuable convoy to go into the neighbourhood of the combined fleet without more efficient protection; and after the change of Ministry in 1782 Moutray had been appointed to this commissionership as a sort of compensation.

Being on half-pay, he had, of course, no executive authority; but as, with ships continually coming and going, the frequent change of senior officer appeared to Hughes likely to cause inconvenience, he directed Moutray to hoist a broad pennant as commodore, and to take on himself the duties of senior officer in the port. Now it was then, as it still is, an established rule in the Navy that no authority but that of the Admiralty can transfer an officer from half-pay to full-pay; and as it was perfectly well known that Moutray was on half-pay, Nelson, coming to Antigua, ordered the broad pennant

to be struck, and sent Moutray notice that he could not take any orders from him until the Admiralty were pleased to put him on full-pay.

Moutray seems to have acquiesced readily enough, knowing, no doubt, that the order was an illegal one, and that his exercise of executive authority was irregular. But Hughes was furious at this second instance of insubordination, and reported the case to the Admiralty. So also did Nelson, with the result that he received a reprimand for his high-handed action. He ought, he was told, "to have submitted his doubts to the Commander-in-Chief, instead of taking upon himself to control Mr. Moutray's exercise of the functions of his appointment." A copy of the minute was sent to Hughes for his satisfaction; but as Moutray had been already ordered home, nothing more was done. At the present time the superintendent of a dockyard, whether at home or abroad, is always an executive officer on full-pay.

In both cases Nelson was right in his contention. Moutray had not, and under the circumstances could not have, any executive power; and the permission given to the American traders was in opposition to the Act of Parliament. On the other hand, it is easy to let our admiration for Nelson's later achievements blind us to the irregularity of his conduct from a service point of view. The first duty of an officer is to obey orders, to submit his doubts to the Commander-in-Chief, and in a becoming manner to remonstrate against any order he conceives to be improper; but for an officer to settle a moot-point himself, and to act in contravention of an order given under presumably adequate knowledge of the circumstances, is subversive of the very first

principles of discipline. And these were not, it will be noticed, questions arising out of any sudden and unforeseen emergency, in providing for which Nelson was forced to depart from his instructions. Such emergencies do arise in the course of service, and the decision of the officer may be a fair test of his personal worth; but neither at St. Kitts nor at Antigua was there anything calling for instant decision, or any question which might not have waited, pending a reference to the Commanderin-Chief or to the Admiralty. And this was the meaning of the Admiralty minute on Nelson's conduct at Antigua, a most gentle admonition for what might have been punished as a grave offence. In themselves the matters were not of much consequence; but as marking Nelson's character at an early period, and illustrating his action in other and more important cases later on, they have a very special significance to any one wishing to examine the story of his career.

Not the least curious point about the dispute at Antigua is, that while refusing to accept Moutray's authority, and sternly and resolutely ordering Moutray's broad pennant to be struck, he was really on very friendly terms with Moutray himself, and was devotedly attached to Moutray's wife, who would seem, though we have no exact information, to have been many years younger than her husband. "Were it not for Mrs. Moutray, who is very, very good to me," Nelson wrote from Antigua, shortly after his arrival on the station, "I should almost hang myself at this infernal hole"; and again, in the middle of the dispute about Moutray's distinguishing pennant, he wrote to his brother: "My dear, sweet friend is going home. I am really an April

day; happy on her account, but truly grieved were I only to consider myself. Her equal I never saw in any country, or in any situation." It is in the same letter that, after giving an account of the young ladies on the station and their various little projects, he adds: "A niece of Governor Parry's has come out. She goes to Nevis in the *Boreas*; they trust any young lady with me, being an old-fashioned fellow."

A few weeks later, towards the middle of March, 1783, he sailed for St. Kitts, in the immediate neighbourhood of which he remained several months, and, as a relief from the troubles of the lawsuits with which he was pestered, fell in love with the niece of Mr. Herbert, the President of Nevis. Herbert's niece, Frances, the daughter of his sister and of William Woolward, a judge of the island, who had died in February, 1779, was at this time just twenty-four, having been born in the early part of 1761. In June, 1779, she had married Doctor Josiah Nisbet, who shortly afterwards became deranged, and died within eighteen months, leaving her with an infant son dependent on her uncle. During Nelson's former visit to St. Kitts he had not had an opportunity of making her acquaintance; but now, very shortly after his return, he was brought to her notice by a letter from a young friend who wrote to her, probably from St. Kitts, in the middle or latter end of March: "We have at last seen the captain of the Boreas, of whom so much has been said. He came up just before dinner, much heated, and was very silent, yet seemed, according to the old adage, to think the more. He declined drinking any wine; but after dinner, when the President, as usual, gave the following toasts, 'The King,' 'The Queen and Royal Family,' and 'Lord Hood,' this strange man regularly filled his glass, and observed that those were always bumper toasts with him; which having drank, he uniformly passed the bottle, and relapsed into his former taciturnity. It was impossible, during this visit, for any of us to make out his real character; there was such a reserve and sternness in his behaviour, with occasional sallies, though very transient, of a superior mind. Being placed by him, I endeavoured to rouse his attention by showing him all the civilities in my power; but I drew out little more than 'Yes,' and 'No.' If you, Fanny, had been there, we think you would have made something of him; for you have been in the habit of attending to these odd sort of people."

On May 12th, Nelson, writing to his brother, says incidentally that he has been visiting a young widow at Nevis; and on June 29th, after writing, "The Admiral, Lady, and Miss sailed from here yesterday. Joy go with them; I had rather have their room than their company "-adds a postscript: "Entre nous. Do not be surprised to hear I am a Benedict, for if at all, it will be before a month. Do not tell." Whether he was already an accepted lover it is impossible to say; probably not, but at any rate he was so within a few weeks; and a letter, written from Antigua on September 11th, begins "My dear Fanny," ends "Your affectionate," and discusses the prospect of their marriage in a calm, business-like manner. The whole tone of the letter, the first, apparently, he wrote to her, is rather esteem than passion; it appears to be written by an affectionate friend rather than by an ardent lover. So much interest attaches to this point, the marriage has

been so often described as a genuine love-match, that it may be well to reproduce this part of it. "I have received a letter from Mr. Herbert, in answer to that which I left at Nevis for him. My greatest wish is to be united to you; and the foundation of all conjugal happiness, real love, and esteem is, I trust, what you believe I possess in the strongest degree towards you. I think Mr. Herbert loves you too well not to let you marry the man of your choice, although he may not be so rich as some others, provided his character and situation in life render such a union eligible. I declare solemnly that, did I not conceive I had the full possession of your heart, no consideration should make me accept your hand. We know that riches do not always ensure happiness: and the world is convinced that I am superior to pecuniary considerations in my public and private life; as in both instances I might have been rich. But I will have done, leaving all my present feelings to operate in your breast: only of this truth be convinced, that I am your affectionate HORATIO NELSON. P.S.—Do I ask too much when I venture to hope for a line? or otherwise I may suppose my letters may be looked on as troublesome." It was the natural sequel to this letter that he should presently write one to his uncle, whose promised assistance nearly two years before had enabled him to propose to Miss Andrews. Mr. Suckling was equally liberal on the present occasion, and agreed to make him a sufficient allowance. What Nelson asked for was £100 a year for a few years, and this was probably what was given. Nelson thought that Herbert would give his niece two or three hundred a year during his life, and he had promised to leave her £20,000 at his death, or the bulk of his property, which was very great, if his own daughter should die before him.

The financial part of the negotiation being thus happily settled, the engagement was recognised; but the letters which Nelson wrote in his occasional absences from Nevis are, as a rule, remarkably sane, or even cool, for a newly-engaged lover. Some few, indeed, are more enthusiastic: some are as frantic as they ought to be; but for the most part they might have been written to Collingwood or any other intimate friend. About the same date, too, he wrote to Mr. Suckling: "I have not an idea of being married till near the time of our sailing for England, which I did not think was to be till 1787; but report says—which I don't believe—we are to go home this summer."

The report was not true, and the Boreas remained sometimes at Nevis, sometimes at Antigua, occasionally at Barbadoes. From the biographical point of view these alternations were fortunate, as they gave rise to several interesting letters to Mrs. Nisbet. His life was meanwhile occupied with the ordinary routine, or with the lawsuits which continued to cause him much annovance and to fill both his public and private letters. Climate and worry combined to wear out his health. "I am worn to a skeleton," he wrote to Mr. Suckling on July 5th, "but I trust that the doctors and asses' milk will set me up again"; and then follows a declaration which curiously confirms the former statement of Prince William as to the way in which the memory of his uncle Maurice was ever before him. "You have been my best friend, and I trust will continue as long so as I shall prove myself, by my actions, worthy of

supplying that place in the service of my country which my dear uncle [Maurice] left for me. I feel myself, to my country, his heir; and it shall, I am bold to say, never lack the want of his counsel; I feel he gave it me as a legacy, and had I been near him when he was removed, he would have said, 'My boy, I leave you to my country. Serve her well, and she'll never desert, but will ultimately reward you.'"

In August Sir Richard Hughes went home, and Nelson was left senior officer on the station, so that when Prince William came out in November as captain of the frigate Pegasus, he was under Nelson's orders and resumed his former friendship with him; and learning that his chief was going to be married, he insisted that he must be present at the ceremony and give the bride away. Of the Prince Nelson formed a most favourable opinion, and most of his letters about this time, to Mrs. Nisbet, to his brother, or to Locker, are full of his praises. "In his profession he is superior to near twothirds on the list"; "In attention to orders and respect to his superior officers I hardly know his equal"; "I wish that all the Navy captains were as attentive to orders as he is." Such are some of the expressions regarding the future king; and though much allowance must be made for Nelson's devoted loyalty and enthusiastic attachment to the Crown, his whole correspondence speaks to his high estimate of the Prince as an officer and a seaman.

On March 12th, 1787, Nelson was married, the Prince, as had been settled, giving the bride away. A month later Nelson wrote to the Admiralty that the Boreas was rotten, and would be too bad for the voyage

if she did not sail before the hurricane season. The Boreas was not an old ship: she had been launched only thirteen years; but the duration of wooden ships, more especially of those built during the ministry of Lord Sandwich, was very capricious. The state of the ship, however, made it necessary to recall her, and she arrived at Spithead on July 4th, 1787, Mrs. Nelson coming to England a passenger in a merchant-ship.

At the time our relations with France were very uncertain; it was thought that war must break out at very short notice, and that therefore it was inexpedient to pay off the frigate. The fleet at Portsmouth was kept ready for sea, and had it sailed, the Boreas would have been attached to it. Nelson thought that nothing would be done that summer, but that war was almost certain to begin in the next year. In the middle of August the Boreas was sent round to the Nore, but with orders to be ready for sea at a moment's warning. the middle of September he wrote: "We are here lying seven miles from the land on the impress service, and am as much separated from my wife as if I were in the East Indies. A war seems at present inevitable. . . . I suppose Boreas will be paid off, and her men put into some other ship, but what may become of me depends on Lord Howe. I always was for actual service, and should not like to be an idle spectator." Again, on October 3rd: "I have asked Lord Howe for a ship of the line, but Boreas is victualled for three months and ready for sea, ordered to hold myself in momentary readiness the moment my orders come on board."

His letters to his brother and Locker while lying at the Nore are frequent, and show no discontent at the duty he was called on to perform, no particular irritation with the Admiralty; and there is absolutely no reason to give the slightest credence to the story that in his extreme disgust he determined to throw up his commission and quit the service. Like many other stories that have passed current, it probably grew up out of the exaggerated repetition of some hasty remark.

The Boreas was paid off in the beginning of December, and after a month in town arranging his affairs, Nelson with his wife went to Bath. "I fear," he wrote, "we must at present give [up] all thoughts of living so near London, for Mrs. Nelson's lungs are so much affected by the smoke of London, that I cannot think of placing her in that situation, however desirable. For the next summer I shall be down in Norfolk; from thence I must look forward." Then he made a trip to Plymouth at the invitation of Prince William, who had just come home in the Pegasus; and writing to Locker, he repeated, in an emphatic manner, his high opinion of the Prince as an officer and seaman. "But," he added, "the great folks above now see he will not be a cypher, therefore many of the rising people must submit to act subordinate to him, which is not so palatable."

Late in the summer of 1788 Nelson went into Norfolk, and, after a little hesitation, made his home with his father at Burnham Thorpe, where, with a few breaks, he lived for the next four and a half years. He was still worried by lawsuits arising out of his conduct in the West Indies, whether in relation to the seizure of American traders or to the detection of frauds in the supply of Government stores; and it was the end of 1789 before these were finally settled so far as he was

concerned. Whether the Admiralty was altogether pleased with his conduct has been doubted. He was, it is true, officially thanked by the several public Boards; but it is quite possible that he was marked as a man likely to give trouble in time of peace by excess of zeal. He himself thought that there was some pique against him at the Admiralty, that Lord Hood was barely civil to him; and it is certain that his applications for employment met with no response beyond a formal acknowledgment. The threatened rupture with Spain on account of the seizure of English ships in Nootka Sound, and that with Russia on account of the occupation of Otchakoff, blew over; ships were commissioned and paid off, and Nelson was left unheeded.

There can be no doubt that he was at this time much straitened in his pecuniary circumstances. A captain's half-pay was but small, about £120 a year, and this, with Mr. Suckling's £100, was all that he had. Whether Mr. Herbert made his niece any allowance is nowhere stated; but we are permitted to suppose that monetary considerations had a great deal to do with his ardent desire to be appointed to a ship. Meanwhile he led, we are told, a life of almost idyllic retirement; gardening, digging, wandering in the woods with his wife, or robbing birds' nests. And a great part of his time was spent in reading, writing, studying charts, drawing plans. That he did read a good deal, more, much more, than has been supposed, is very probable; that he studied charts and drew occasional plans is not improbable; but it is very unlikely that he wrote much, except letters, and those at this period of his life were few. In many ways, however, this time of enforced retirement was of

advantage to him, and, by giving him opportunity for reading and reflection, completed the education which had been going on in a practical way ever since he left school at an age when education could scarcely have begun.

But he never ceased to wish for active employment, hopeless as it seemed to him. During the Spanish armament he called on Lord Hood, then a Lord of the Admiralty, and asked for his interest with Lord Chatham (the First Lord), that he might be appointed to a ship. Hood declined, and told him that "the King was impressed with an unfavourable opinion of him." "I cannot look on Lord Hood as my friend," he wrote in December, 1792; "but I have the satisfaction of knowing that I never gave his Lordship just cause to be my enemy." It is quite possible that he misunderstood this. Hood had formerly given him what he wanted, and was therefore his friend; now he could not grant his request, and therefore was no longer his friend. Probably Hood's feelings towards him were unchanged; but as he was some thirty-four years Nelson's senior, the commonplaces of intimacy and friendship were scarcely to be expected, and Hood was not one to put himself out to appear more amiable than he was. That he thought Nelson an able man, one to be relied on when real work was to be done, was shown by his immediately appointing him to a ship when a rupture with France was imminent. War was not declared till February 11th, 1793; but for more than a month it had been looked on as inevitable. On January 2nd the Childers brig, looking into Brest, was fired on: the shot was taken to the Admiralty, where Nelson saw

it; and on the 7th, Lord Chatham, with many apologies, offered him the command of a 64-gun ship, if he would take it till there should be a 74 available. "After clouds comes sunshine," he wrote to his wife. "The Admiralty so smile upon me, that really I am as much surprised as when they frowned." On January 30th he was appointed to the Agamemnon.

## CHAPTER III

## CORSICA

THE commissioning of the Agamemnon was a very important era in Nelson's life. It may almost be spoken of as the beginning of his war-service; for what he had seen on the Spanish Main while in command of the Hinchinbroke, or in the West Indies while in the Albemarle, was scarcely worth mentioning, except that it had served to steady his own nerves and teach him how far he could depend on himself. He was now, after several years of reflection and of pondering over the mistakes and experiences of the past, making a fresh start with new officers, on a new station, and in very different circumstances. He was nearly thirty-four. but as yet his name was scarcely known outside his own family and the circle of his intimate acquaintance. To the Navy at large he could only be "the fellow that had the row with old Hughes"; and, with the exception of Hood, he could be little more to the Admiralty.

It was from the first understood that the Agamemnon was to go out to the Mediterranean as part of the fleet under the command of Lord Hood; but it was the end of April before she was ready to leave the Thames for Spithead. She was then sent for a cruise in the

Chops of the Channel, apparently to let the newly-commissioned ship shake down, though Nelson, in his impatience, wrote that she was "sported with merely to hum the nation." By May 23rd the fleet of eleven sail of the line under Hood's command was collected off the Lizard, and a fortnight later it proceeded on its way to Gibraltar and the Mediterranean.

Meantime, and in the manner natural to him, Nelson had been forming his opinion of the Agamemnon, her officers and men. He joined her on February 7th, and on the 10th wrote: "My ship is without exception the finest 64 in the service, and has the character of sailing most remarkably well. . . . The officers are all good in their respective stations and known to me, except the surgeon." On the 21st: "I am very much disposed to like Mr. Fellowes (the purser) and have told him so . . but that he must be very careful that no just cause of complaint can be made against him, for I will not suffer any poor fellow to be lessened of his due."

It may be necessary to explain that then, as all through last century and the first half of this, the chief part of the purser's emoluments was derived from the profit on the stores and slops which he issued; that it was thus directly to his interest to issue short measures, and that he was almost always suspected of doing so; that he was commonly referred to as "nip-cheese," and was said to choose his steward for the size of his thumb, so that by holding the measure with his thumb inside it, a respectable percentage of rum could be saved. Of course he was supposed to see that cloth, when being issued, was stretched to the point of rending; and though these devices were perhaps much exaggerated in

popular fancy, it is more than probable that a fraudulent agreement was frequently made with the contractor, by which cloth and clothes of an inferior quality were accepted and issued at the full price. Against such practices Nelson waged unceasing war, and took the earliest opportunity of letting the purser of the Agamemnon understand that he would not put up with any nonsense.

That Nelson was one of the most popular captains who ever commanded a ship is well known. But he was popular with his men not by pandering to their weaknesses and irregularities, but by a careful and continuous attention to their comforts and their rights; he won the love of his officers not by tolerating neglect of duty, but by starting with the belief that they were all as determined as himself to do their duty to the utmost of their power, and that it was impossible he could be mistaken. It was thus that by April 18th he wrote: "I not only like the ship but think I am well appointed in officers, and we are manned exceedingly well, therefore have no doubt but we shall acquit ourselves well should the French give us a meeting. . . . With a good ship and ship's company, we can come to no harm. We appear to sail very fast." And on the 29th: "We are all well: indeed, nobody can be ill with my ship's company, they are so fine a set." In reality, of course, they were at first much the same as those of the other ships commissioned at the same time and manned in the same way. What they were after they had been a couple of years under the influence of Nelson is a very different thing.

On the way to Gibraltar, in order to save time, the

Agamemnon, with five other ships, was sent into Cadiz to water; and Nelson had an opportunity of forming an estimate of the Spanish navy. "We dined on board the Concepcion, of 112 guns, with the admiral," he wrote on June 23rd, "and all restraints of going into their arsenals and dockyards were removed. They have four first-rates in commission at Cadiz, and very fine ships, but shockingly manned. If those twenty-one sail of the line which we are to join in the Mediterranean are not better manned, they cannot be of much use."

A fortnight later the English fleet fell in with the Spanish off Alicante, twenty-four sail of the line. As the English, on first seeing them, formed line of battle, the Spaniards attempted to do the same, but after several hours' trial did not succeed. Then, having made out Hood's private signals, they sent down a frigate to explain that they were very sickly; and no wonder, for they had been sixty days at sea. Nelson thought this ridiculous, for he wrote: "From the circumstance of having been longer than that time at sea do we attribute our getting healthy. It has stamped with me the extent of their nautical abilities; long may they remain in their present state."

Nelson arrived at a right conclusion from false reasoning. The English seamen of 1793 were scarcely better than those of 1778 when the fleet coming to Spithead after a cruise of a couple of months off Ushant sent upwards of four thousand men to hospital; and this had been the rule. Nelson would seem also to have forgotten his own cruise in the *Albemarle* in 1782. Hawke, indeed, in 1759 had succeeded in keeping a fleet at sea and in health for months together, but it was by a system of

constant reliefs; and Rodney in 1782 had been equally fortunate, but the fleet was not continuously at sea. It was only with the beginning of the war of the French Revolution that, following the lessons taught by Captain Cook, and by the rediscovery of the specific value of lemon-juice, it became possible to keep a fleet healthy without frequent refreshment. Hood's fleet had indeed refreshed at Cadiz or Gibraltar, but independent of that, its health seems to have been extraordinary. The mere fact that the Spanish fleet of twenty-four sail of the line had nineteen hundred sick on board after sixty days at sea, was not in itself a proof of want of seamanship, though the inability to form line of battle in several hours might be considered so; and Nelson, putting together that fact, what he had seen at Cadiz, and what he had heard of Rodney's action off Cape St. Vincent, was fully justified in forming the conclusion that the Langara of 1793 was no better seaman than the Langara of 1780, and that the men he commanded were far from efficient. It does not, however, appear that this conclusion was generally accepted in the English fleet; and for several years the Spanish navy was held to be as strong in reality as in outward show.

In the middle of July the fleet arrived off Toulon, and instituted a close blockade of that port and Marseilles. Nelson wrote that "not a boat could get in, and the old saying 'that hunger will tame a lion' was never more strongly exemplified." On August 23rd commissioners were sent on board the flagship *Victory*, to treat for peace on the basis of declaring a Monarchical form of government in France; and a Republican army having taken possession of Marseilles, Toulon surrendered

to the English, putting the citadel, the forts, and the ships at Hood's disposal. Langara with the Spanish fleet joined Hood just at this time, and the two together went into the harbour, while Nelson, in the Agamemnon, was hurriedly despatched to Naples to ask for and to bring back ten thousand troops to garrison the forts and hold the city.

This last he was not able to do; for, though the Neapolitan Government received him with open arms and readily promised the troops, just as preparations were being made for a visit from the King, the Agamemnon was hurried to sea by the news of a French ship of war being in the offing. Whether the news was false or not does not appear; but at any rate Nelson saw nothing of her, and hearing of a French 40-gun frigate at Leghorn, he put in there, hoping she might attempt to sail. This she would not do while the Agamemnon was there; and after waiting a few days for her, Nelson rejoined the Admiral at Toulon. The troops were meantime sent from Naples, and with them two ships of the line, one of which, the Tancredi, was commanded by the Chevalier Francisco Caracciolo, at this time an officer of good repute in the Neapolitan navy. By the middle of October Toulon was held by a force of upwards of twelve thousand men under the white flag of the Bourbons. But notwithstanding the numbers, the garrison had no cohesion, consisting as it did of so many different nationalities, all speaking different languages, with different interests, and recognising no one commander.

It is certain that the English in general, and probably Hood himself, believed Langara to be in treacherous communication with the Convention; and though there does not seem to be any clear evidence of this, the mere suspicion was in itself a marked element of weakness. Hood would have sent the French ships away; but the Toulonese not unnaturally objected to this. They were in arms against the Convention, not against France, and believed that the revolt of Toulon was but the prelude to the uprising of all France. The Spaniards were equally opposed to the ships being taken possession of by the English, and Hood, obliged to keep terms with his allies whom he mistrusted, was unable to provide for the security of the ships or of the city, as he would fain have done. Thus it was that when the Republicans attacked in force, they had little difficulty in rendering themselves masters of the inefficient defences.

Then followed a scene of confusion and terror such as has rarely been paralleled. Hood, seeing that the place was untenable, gave orders for its evacuation, and warned the inhabitants to provide for their safety. This was on December 17th. It had already been determined to burn the arsenal and the ships, men-of-war and merchant-ships. The signal was made for the fleets to put to sea; many of the ships, with their topmasts struck, were busy refitting; one, the Courageux, was hove down. They were got ready in a marvellously short time, and hauled out into the roadstead. During the 18th the English got their sick, wounded, and soldiers on board without confusion; but the Spaniards, Piedmontese, and Neapolitans were less able, and the disorder became very great. The terror and despair of the Toulonese were extreme. They sought to get on board the English and Spanish ships of war, which received crowds: the Princess Royal had four thousand of

them on board, the Robust, three thousand; others got on board merchant-ships, fishing-boats, anything that could float. In all about fifteen thousand were able to leave the town. Many were drowned; many were killed by the shot from the French batteries. Then night came on; the city and harbour were lighted up by the blazing dockvard and a number of ships of the line, set on fire by a party under the orders of Captain Sir Sidney Smith. The Spaniards had undertaken to set fire to the ships in the inner basin; but in the confusion and consequent panic they neglected to do so, with one exception, the powder-magazine. This, which ought of course to have been scuttled and sunk where she was, was stupidly,-it cannot have been treacherously -set on fire, and the terrific explosion increased the panic. During the night the fleets got into the outer road, and put to sea on the 19th as the Republican troops entered the town, to wreak a terrible vengeance on the miserable remnant of the inhabitants, -the old, the weak, women and children, who had been unable to get on board any vessel. The number who perished,-killed during the siege, drowned on the night of the 18th, or butchered afterwards by the victors—is estimated at about six thousand.

With all this, however, Nelson had nothing to do. On joining Hood on October 5th, he had been sent to cruise on the coast of Corsica, and a few days later received orders to join Commodore Linzee, Hood's brother-in-law, off the south end of Sardinia. In going to the rendezvous, on October 22nd, off Cagliari, he fell in with a squadron of five French ships, which proved to be a brig, a corvette, and three large frigates. One

of these last he cut off and brought to action; but her consorts coming up, she joined them, and the Agamemnon was in no case to pursue them. The main topmast was shot to pieces, mainmast, mizenmast, and foreyard badly wounded, and the rigging much cut. There is a prevalent opinion that in the old war a frigate could not and never did engage a ship of the line. Of course it is a mistake: scores of instances could be adduced to prove that it is; and this is a very marked one. The frigate engaged, the Melpomène, though much damaged herself, succeeded during a running fight in doing a great deal of damage to the Agamemnon; and it appears certain that a bolder conduct on the part of the other two large frigates must have placed the Agamemnon in a very awkward predicament. The result of the encounter, slight as it was, leaves no room to doubt Nelson's opinion that they had a very great superiority of force, and ought to have made a concerted attack on him. The French officers did not recognise this, and were probably very well satisfied with getting away from a 64-gun ship.

On joining Linzee, the little squadron of three 74-gun ships, the Agamemnon, and two frigates went to Tunis, where the business was to negotiate with the Bey, and if possible bring away the French 80-gun ship Duquesne together with some merchantmen. Nelson, who believed that the English never succeeded in a negotiation against the French, was not surprised at their failure on this occasion, and thought that they ought to have helped themselves to the ships, and given the Bey £50,000 to put up with the insult to his dignity; as it was, he wrote. "We got nothing but being laughed at, and I

don't like it." He thought that Linzee had not shown as much decision in the matter as he might have done, and was well pleased when Hood, in "a very handsome letter," gave him an independent command of a frigate squadron on the coast of Corsica and Italy, to protect the trade, blockade Genoa, and look after the French frigates at San Fiorenzo,—the same that he had fallen in with on October 22nd. This was in the end of November, and on December 26th he was at Leghorn, whence he sent to the Admiralty the intelligence that reached him as to the loss of Toulon. A month later Hood, leaving the greater part of the fleet to watch Toulon, joined him on the coast of Corsica, which he had now determined to reduce.

A close blockade had been kept up by Nelson's squadron, and when the transports, after being scattered by a gale, were got together and the troops landed, San Fiorenzo surrendered without resistance on February 17th, the French garrison retiring to Bastia, which Hood wished to attack at once. On the 19th Nelson wrote to him that he had been looking at Bastia, and thought that, besides the seamen and Corsicans, they ought to have a thousand troops for a successful attempt. The General in command of the soldiers at San Fiorenzo, however, refused to make the attempt with all the men he had, about eighteen hundred, or until a reinforcement of two thousand men could be brought up from Gibraltar. With the force at their disposal, he considered the siege "to be a most visionary and rash attempt, and such as no officer would be justified in undertaking." Hood tried to argue the point; but as he could not command, the General remained firm, and refused to move.

Nelson had meantime made several desultory attacks on the seaward batteries, and had convinced himself that the place was not likely to make any prolonged resistance: one thousand men, he wrote, would certainly take it; with five hundred and the Agamemnon he would attempt it. Hood was anxious to make the trial, but was unwilling to risk his ships in doing soldiers' work; and it was only after Nelson's repeated assurances that the attempt was feasible, assurances supported by the opinion of two young officers, Lieutenant Duncan of the Artillery and Mr. de Butts of the Engineers, that he gave way. As the General refused to let him have any troops, with the exception of a few artillerymen, the work had to be done entirely from the fleet, from which the marines and soldiers serving as marines, nearly twelve hundred strong, were landed on April 4th, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Villettes of the Sixty-Ninth Regiment, and a party of two hundred and fifty seamen commanded by Nelson, with whom were Captains Anthony Hunt, Serocold, and Bullen. Six 13-inch and two 10-inch mortars were also landed, and ten of the Agamemnon's long 24-pounders. It was with these that the seamen were chiefly concerned; they made the roads, they dug the trenches, they built the batteries, they cut down trees, they laid platforms, they dragged the guns into position, and when there they worked them. For so small a number of men the labour was extremely hard; but they went about it with a will. The progress of the siege, however, was slow, the force employed in it being too small to permit the business to be hurried.

But meantime, with the assistance of a considerable

body of Corsicans, the investment on the land side was secure, and the blockade by sea was rigidly enforced. The garrison made several ineffectual attempts to obtain relief by boats; their provisions and ammunition were running short; they had many men killed and wounded, and many sick; and on May 19th they sent off a flag of truce with proposals to surrender. On the 24th the garrison, to the number of four thousand five hundred men, marched out and laid down their arms. Nelson wrote of "four thousand five hundred men laying down their arms to less than one thousand British soldiers who were serving as marines," and in the excitement of the moment it probably seemed so to him and those immediately concerned; but in his calmer moments no one knew better than he did that the success was mainly due to the action of the fleet, and that without it the small force on shore would have been altogether unequal to the task.

That much of the credit of the success belonged to Nelson must be admitted. Without his confidence Hood would scarcely have made the attempt; and his command of the seamen gave him a large share of the responsibility of what was done on shore. Hood, however, seems to have felt some difficulty in awarding the praise. It was clearly impossible for him in an official letter to speak his mind of the General's refusal to cooperate, or of his having himself yielded to the urgency of a subordinate; and of the work on shore he formed an estimate somewhat different from that of Nelson, who, in his familiar letters, described himself as having done the whole. He certainly did not command Villettes and the soldiers, who were to the seamen landed in the

ratio of four to one; and his own letters during the siege show that there was some doubt whether he commanded the batteries. On April 25th he wrote to Hood, specifically stating that this doubt did exist, and asking him for "an order to command the seamen without any distinction as to any particular services." It does not, however, appear that he got such an order; and the wording of Hood's despatch, "Captain Nelson, who had the command and direction of the seamen in landing the guns, mortars, and stores, and Captain Hunt, who commanded at the batteries . . .," as well as of the official note accompanying it, "Captain Hunt, who was on shore in the command of the batteries," clearly implies that he did not. According to Southey, "Nelson's signal merits were not so mentioned in the despatches as to make them sufficiently known to the nation. . . . This could only have arisen from the haste with which the despatches were written." But the despatch was dated May 24th, five days after the negotiations began, and shows no signs of undue haste, either in these sentences or in any other. That Nelson's services had exceeded the strict limits of his command, that Hood knew this and regulated his conduct thereby, is quite another thing, which he did not think it fitting to speak of in his public letters.

What gave Nelson almost as much gratification as the fall of Bastia was the capture there of La Flêche, the smallest of the frigate-squadron of the preceding October. Two of the larger frigates had been sunk at San Fiorenzo; but one, the Minerve, had been weighed, and under the name of San Fiorenzo continued in the English service during the war. The third frigate, the Melpomène,

with which the Agamemnon had been engaged, and the corvette, the Mignonne, were at Calvi, which Hood was now bent on reducing. But as he was getting ready for this new undertaking, he received intelligence that the French fleet, of nine sail of the line, had put to sea on June 5th, and that Vice-Admiral Hotham, who with seven sail was watching off Toulon, had fallen back to San Fiorenzo, considering the disparity of numbers too great. The disparity did not in fact exist, for the French fleet numbered only seven; but Hotham had not troubled to ascertain this, and Hood of course accepted the report. With six ships he sailed at once, joined Hotham on the 9th, and on the 10th sighted the enemy near St. Tropez. He could not prevent them going into the Golfe Jouan (which our older writers persistently miscall Gourjean Bay); but with a vastly superior force he resolved to go in and destroy them there, anchoring two ships against each one of the enemy.

Secure in his numbers, he had previously sent the Agamemnon back to carry on the arrangements for the siege of Calvi, meaning to follow so soon as the work immediately before him was finished. Unfortunately the wind for several days rendered it impossible for him to go into Golfe Jouan; and when at last it permitted him, the enemy had made such use of the delay, by mounting guns on the islands which protected the anchorage, that he considered it unadvisable to make the attempt.

There were by this time nearly two thousand soldiers at Bastia, under the command of General Stuart, a man of a more enterprising character than his predecessors. Of these soldiers, fifteen hundred were now embarked, escorted to the west side of the island, and landed near Calvi on the 19th. About two hundred seamen from the Agamemnon and the transports were also landed, and, as at Bastia, undertook the heavy work of getting the guns into position. When Hood with a part of the fleet arrived a few days later, more seamen were landed, and with them Captains Hallowell and Walter Serocold, the latter of whom had served with Hunt in the batteries at Bastia, and was here killed by a grapeshot on July 7th. After three weeks of severe toil, the batteries opened fire upon the town. For several days this was continued with little intermission, Nelson and Hallowell, with whom he was now for the first time intimately associated, taking alternate twenty-four hours of duty at the advanced battery. Many guns were broken or dismounted by the enemy's fire; others were brought up in their place; casualties were not infrequent. At 7 o'clock on the morning of July 12th, a shot, striking the parapet of the battery, dashed some sand and gravel against Nelson's face, bruising his head and cutting the right eye. The wound did not confine him, and the surgeons gave him hopes that it would have no serious consequences. These hopes, however, were not realised, and the sight of the damaged eye gradually faded away till it was entirely lost. But meantime the siege continued. and on August 1st the garrison agreed to surrender, if not effectively relieved within ten days.

The negotiation was entirely in the hands of the General. Nelson by no means approved of it; he would have run under the bastion and blown it into the air in less time. "I own," he wrote, "I had rather take a

place by our own fire and efforts than by the enemy being starved and sickly." On the 10th the garrison marched out with the honours of war, laid down their arms, and were embarked for a passage to France. The merchant-ships, the gunboats, and the frigates Melpomène and Mignonne also fell into the hands of the English. The two frigates were both added to the British Navy. The Mignonne proved unserviceable and was destroyed; but the Melpomène continued effective during the war, and has transmitted her name through later ships to the present time.

Hood had already felt anxious about the French fleet at Toulon. He knew that several of the ships sunk or burned on December 18th had sustained little injury, and were being rapidly got ready for service in addition to the seven already blockaded in Golfe Jouan. Now that Calvi had fallen and the conquest of Corsica was complete, he rejoined the fleet. The Agamemnon was sent to Leghorn to refit, as well as to refresh her men, on whom the work of the siege had fallen heavily, and whose health now suffered. By the middle of September she again joined the Admiral off Toulon, and was immediately sent to Genoa, to protect and insist on the neutrality of the Republic. But her men continued very sickly; in the middle of October she had still seventy-seven on the sick list, "almost all objects for the hospital."

It was by this time settled that Hood was to return to England, leaving the command temporarily to Vice-Admiral Hotham. The cause of this has never been shown, and it is uncertain whether it was for Hood's own convenience, or to enable him to confer with the Government more freely than was then possible by letter. It was, however, clearly understood that he was to resume the command after a short absence. That he did not do so was in consequence of a difference between him and the Admiralty as to the necessity of reinforcing the fleet, on which, and the neglect of the Admiralty, he expressed himself with what was considered undue vigour. When he resigned the command no other admiral was available; and it was thought that it might very well remain in the hands of Hotham, a man who had distinguished himself on several occasions during the American War, and was recognised as a brave man and a good officer. In chief command, however, he was nervous, timid and undecided; "He is careful of us," wrote Nelson, "and will not suffer a line-of-battle ship to get out of his sight."

## CHAPTER IV

## THE GULF OF GENOA

By the end of January the French, having succeeded in bringing back their squadron from Golfe Jouan, had fifteen ships in the outer road of Toulon. To oppose these the English Admiral had thirteen under his command. In February a fourteenth joined him, as also the Neapolitan Tancredi, thus bringing the numerical number of the two fleets to a very close equality. "I wish Lord Hood would make haste out," wrote Nelson on March 2nd. On March 8th Hotham, then lying at Leghorn, received intelligence of the French being at sea. At daybreak the next morning he weighed with the fleet, thirteen sail of the line and the Tancredi. The Berwick, which had been at San Fiorenzo, in attempting to join the fleet at Leghorn had fallen in among the enemy on the 7th and been captured. During the 9th, 10th, and 11th the French fleet was repeatedly seen to the westward and reported by our frigates; but Hotham, whether with the intention of cutting them off from Toulon or not, stood to the northward and did not sight the enemy till the morning of the 12th. The fleet was then very much scattered, and in the light, fitful breeze was not able to get together. Admiral

Goodall formed the ships near him in a line of battle: Hotham did the same; but apparently nothing but the incapacity of the enemy saved the English from a grave disaster. "Our ships endeavouring to form a junction," was Nelson's description of the situation, "the enemy pointing to separate us. They did not appear to me to act like officers who knew anything of their profession." Though they were bringing up a fresh southerly breeze, they could neither form line of battle nor collect their own fleet.

Late in the afternoon a fresh wind from the eastward sprang up, and Hotham succeeded in forming his line of battle towards the south, standing for the enemy's fleet. The enemy were still in straggling disorder, and Nelson thought that if the breeze held, our fleet would pass through them, cutting off the van from the centre. But the wind, which in these seas is very capricious, suddenly flew round to the westward, and together with the darkness prevented immediate action. The next morning, March 13th, the enemy's fleet was still in sight, a fresh wind was blowing, and the signal was made for a general chase. The French 84-gun ship Ça Ira carried away her topmasts and fell astern. The Inconstant frigate, commanded by Captain Fremantle, attempted to cut her off, but was unable to stand against the Ca Ira's heavy guns. Two French ships then joined the Ca Ira, and a frigate took her in tow. The Agamemnon was at this time well up with them, and Nelson saw that, had he been supported, it would have been possible to take the whole four; but no ship was near, and all he could do was to attempt the destruction of the Ca Ira by keeping under her stern, avoiding her very superior broadsides, and

yawing from time to time to pour in a raking and destructive fire. This went on for a couple of hours, at the end of which time the Ca Ira was a perfect wreck; but the enemy then came down in force to her rescue, Hotham made the signal for the van ships to join him, and for that day the Ca Ira was saved.

But the next morning the wind, continuing fresh, had shifted to the north-west, and given the weather-gage to the English, who were thus able to bring on a desultory action, and to cut off the Ca Ira in tow of the 74-gun ship Censeur. These two were speedily overpowered, and were taken possession of by a party from the Agamemnon. They had suffered most severely. The Ca Ira was completely dismasted, and was supposed to have three hundred and fifty killed and wounded; the Censeur, which had lost her mainmast, had lost about two hundred and fifty. The loss of men in the whole English fleet was less than that on board the Ca Ira alone; and though some of the English ships had their rigging cut and their masts wounded or shot away, the damage was relatively unimportant. The Agamemnon had been the most closely engaged, and of her Nelson wrote, "Our sails were ribbons, and all our ropes were ends"; but she had only six men wounded on the 14th, and seven on the 13th.

As to the action itself, it was Nelson's first experience. He had seen that the enemy with superior numbers would not push the fighting; he had judged that their officers were ignorant of their profession; he saw that they were unable to take advantage of the opportunity which had been given them. On the other hand, he had seen the danger to which the English were exposed

by having allowed themselves to drift asunder, and the loss which the country had sustained from their not being in a position to compel the enemy to abide their attack. At the time, he wrote to his uncle that, "Had the breeze continued so as to have allowed us to close with the enemy, we should have destroyed the whole fleet": but to his wife, with greater freedom: "Had I commanded our fleet on the 14th, either the whole French fleet would have graced my triumph, or I should have been in a confounded scrape. I went on board Admiral Hotham as soon as our firing grew slack in the van and the Ca Ira and Censeur struck, to propose to him leaving our two crippled ships, the two prizes, and four frigates to themselves, and to pursue the enemy; but he, much cooler than myself, said, 'We must be contented, we have done very well.' Now had we taken ten sail, and had allowed the eleventh to escape, when it had been possible to have got at her, I could never have called it well done. Goodall backed me; I got him to write to the Admiral, but it would not do. We should have had such a day as, I believe, the annals of England never produced."

If this was his opinion at the time, we may be quite sure that further reflection but confirmed his judgment, and that during the months which followed he often asked himself how Locker's old chief would have conducted the business; what Hood would have done; or what he himself would have done, had he been indeed in command. The questions, too, had the added weight of his continually-growing conviction of Hotham's weakness. For a month after the battle the fleet lay at San Fiorenzo, leisurely refitting, while six French ships of the line, sent round from Brest under the command of

M. Renaudin, the captain of the Vengeur on the First of June, passed up and arrived at Toulon on April 4th. Nelson wrote of it to his father: "What the Admiralty are after to allow such a reinforcement to get out here, surprises us all"; but in every letter at this time his cry was: "We are anxious to hear of Lord Hood's sailing from England"; "We hope soon to see Lord Hood"; "We have lost much by Lord Hood's going to England." And to his old captain, Locker, on May 4th he wrote: "Admiral Hotham is very well, but I believe heartily tired of his temporary command; nor do I think he is intended by nature for a commander-in-chief, which requires a man of more active turn of mind." That the six ships were allowed to leave Brest may have been the fault of the Admiralty, or of the strain on the resources at their disposal; but that they passed into Toulon unopposed was very clearly Hotham's fault; and of that Nelson had no doubt, though he did not say it in so many words.

The Admiralty, having allowed six French ships to come into the Mediterranean, sent six English ships under Rear-Admiral Man to reinforce Hotham, whose fleet then consisted of twenty English ships and two Neapolitan. But on June 22nd Nelson wrote from off Minorca: "We have this day accounts of the French fleet's being at sea with twenty-two sail of the line and innumerable frigates, etc. We are waiting for our valuable convoy from Gibraltar, expected every moment; are totally ignorant which way the enemy's fleet are gone; hope sincerely they will not fall in with our convoy, but our Admiral takes things easy. Lord Hood's absence is a great national loss."

Meanwhile he was speculating on the probability of his getting his flag, of which he was much afraid, as likely to send him home and put him on half-pay: he hoped that instead of his flag he might get a colonelcy of marines, the pay of which would make a substantial addition to his income, and not interfere with his employment affoat. "It would suit me much better at present," he wrote. But his heart was sad, for each day his opinion grew stronger that under such a commander as Hotham no success was to be hoped for. On July 1st he wrote: "The French fleet of seventeen sail of the line are out, but only to exercise their men, -at least our good Admiral says so"; and referring to the capture of the French frigate Minerve, and the defeat of the Artemise by two very much smaller ships, the Dido and Lowestoft, "Thank God," he seemed to cry, "the superiority of the British Navy remains. I feel quite delighted at the event. Had our present fleet but one good chance at the enemy, on my conscience, without exaggeration, I believe that if the Admiral would let us pursue, we should take them all."

Three days later Nelson in the Agamemnon, with four or five frigates and small craft, was directed to go to Genoa, and to co-operate with the Austrian General in the Riviera. Off Cape delle Melle he fell in with the French fleet of seventeen sail, which chased him back to San Fiorenzo, where Hotham was lying, "having reason," he wrote, "to suppose that the enemy were certainly in Toulon," but having taken no pains to find out. When it was too late he wished to put to sea, but the wind prevented him, and it was not till the next day that he succeeded in getting out with twenty-three

ships of the line. The French, who had believed the English to be still off Minorca, were disagreeably surprised to find them in their immediate neighbourhood, and took advantage of the delay to make for their own coast. They were thus not sighted till the 13th, being then some six leagues south of the Hyères Islands. Hotham made the signal for a general chase, but some six or seven ships only got within range and engaged, till the Admiral "judged it proper to call them off by signal," being apprehensive that they were too near the shore. The wind was at the time blowing directly into the Gulf of Frejus, where the enemy anchored after dark. We may be perfectly sure that if Nelson had been in command the English would have anchored with them. That the opportunity of a complete victory, an annihilation of the French fleet, was offered them, he never doubted: "To say how much we wanted Lord Hood at that time is to say, Will you have all the French fleet or no action? for the scrambling distant fire was a farce. Hotham has no head for enterprise, perfectly satisfied that each month passes without any losses on our side."

So soon as the action was over and there was no longer any possibility of his being interfered with by the French fleet, Nelson was again sent on his former mission to Genoa and the Riviera, a detached service on which he continued with little intermission for more than a year. And peculiarly active service it was, though of a nature which it would be tedious to relate in detail. It was difficult moreover in its political relations; for Genoa, nominally neutral, was overawed by the French, who used the country for their own purposes and forbade any favour to their enemies. The Genoese

had no doubt that severe punishment would follow their disobedience; they believed that the English would be a more generous enemy, and made their choice What Nelson had before him was to accordingly. thwart the designs of the French; to stop their coasting trade, on which the south of France was largely dependent for its supplies, corn, vegetables, and such like; to prevent their troops or provisions of war being transported by sea, or so far as possible by land; and to do all this without giving the Genoese just cause to complain of a violation of their neutrality. In this he was guided by the advice of Mr. Trevor and Mr. Drake, the Ministers at Turin and Genoa, but from Hotham he seems to have received neither counsel nor assistance. "However," he wrote, "political courage in an officer abroad is as highly necessary as military courage"; and acting on that maxim, constituted himself virtually independent and Commander-in-Chief of the inshore squadron. Within a month he wrote: "The French army is now supplied with almost daily bread from Marseilles; not a single boat has passed with corn. The Genoese are angry, but that does not matter."

The rule which he laid down was that any part of the Riviera occupied by the French army should be considered enemy's country and be treated as such; that, in fact, the pretence of neutrality should not shelter the French army or its operations; and acting on this, on August 26th he seized a 10-gun corvette, with some armed boats and eight store-ships, at Alassio. On the 31st he wrote: "The Genoese are going, it is said, to carry a convoy with provisions to their towns in the Riviera of Genoa, in possession of the French army

However cruel it may appear to deprive poor innocent people of provisions, yet policy will not allow it [not] to be done; for if the inhabitants have plenty, so will the enemy, and therefore I have directed them to be brought into Vado. . . . Our Admiral, entre nous, has no political courage whatever, and is alarmed at the mention of any strong measure; but, in other respects, he is as good a man as can possibly be." Many of his most interesting letters at this time are written to Sir Gilbert Elliot, the English Vicerov of Corsica, afterwards Earl of Minto and Governor-General of India, with whom he had contracted a friendship which lasted through life. It seems, in fact, that, in want of a Commander-in-Chief on whom he could depend, he turned to Elliot for advice or suggestions as to the diplomatic entanglements which strewed his path. Not indeed that he allowed these to trouble him too much; but it was no doubt comforting to him to find the chief representative of the Foreign Office in the neighbourhood taking his view of the question. He would gladly have done more than he did, but his force was insufficient, and Hotham would not increase it. "I only want transports," he wrote to Elliot on September 24th, "and if he gave me one 74, I verily believe we should yet possess Nice." But Hotham made no sign; and the Austrians naturally complained that they had been brought to the coast at the express desire of the English, to co-operate with the fleet which they never saw, while the detached squadron was so miserably insufficient or ineffective that it had not been able to prevent the French gunboats from harassing their left wing in the Bay of Loano, where no gunboats should have been allowed.

Nelson had no difficulty in showing that the loss they complained of was none of his doing; that one 64-gun ship, whose presence at Genoa was clearly wanted and was emphatically demanded by the imperial Minister, could not be also at Pietra; that the frigates which he had left for that service had been taken away without his knowledge; and that though the gunboats annoyed their retreat, they had nothing to do with their defeat which began with the right wing twelve miles inland. He was anxious to justify himself to the Austrian General, and sent a letter for him to Mr. Drake; which, however, Drake did not forward, submitting to Nelson whether it was proper to offer any justification of his conduct to a foreign general. Besides, he continued, "anxious as the Austrian Generals are to transfer the blame of the misfortunes of November 23rd from themselves to us, they have always done ample justice to your zealous and able conduct; their complaints turn upon the insufficiency of the force under your command, and not upon the mode in which that force was employed."

This insufficiency of his force was exactly what Nelson had striven against; nor had he forgotten it five years later, when he wrote to Lord Keith, then preparing for the siege of Genoa: "You will now bear me out in my assertion, when I say that the British fleet could have prevented the invasion of Italy; and at that time we had nothing to do. If our friend Hotham had kept his fleet on that coast, I assert, and you will agree with me, no army from France could have been furnished with stores or provisions; even men could not have marched." That the fleet was doing nothing, and

might have been commanding the Riviera, is certain; but the presence of a large French fleet at Toulon gave Hotham the excuse of having to keep watch on it, and so not being able to spare Nelson any reinforcements; as to which Captain Mahan has aptly remarked: "Hotham could better have spared ships to Nelson if he had not thrown away his two opportunities of beating the Toulon fleet."

It is indeed difficult to realise the enormous difference which would have been made in the history of the war if the French fleet had been destroyed on July 13th, as Nelson at the time thought it might and should have been destroyed, and as we, reading the story of the battle by the light of what Nelson did three years later, now see was a perfectly feasible operation for any commander of strong resolution. With that fleet destroyed, the Riviera would have been effectively guarded: men could not have marched; stores could not have passed; Italy could not have been invaded. Neither Loano nor Montenotte would have been fought, and Bonaparte's patent of nobility would have had to be sought elsewhere; the history of Italy for the next twenty years, and for all time, would have been cast in a different mould; Spain would have remained true to the English alliance, and the French expedition to Egypt would have remained undreamed of. That the rise and grandeur of Bonaparte's career are thus bound up with Hotham's irresolution on July 13th, has perhaps not been so generally noticed or understood as the interest of the fact deserves; but in this sense that "miserable action," as Nelson called it, appears more worthy than Valmy of being styled a decisive battle.

Hotham had meantime written to be recalled, on the plea of ill-health, and Sir John Jervis was at once named as the fitting successor. As captain of the Foudroyant in the War of American Independence, Jervis had distinguished himself by the perfection of the discipline and order of his ship, the beauty and value of which had shone forth with redoubled splendour in the easy capture of the French Pégase. He had afterwards taken a leading part in the opposition to Pitt's fancy for resting the defence of the south coast on fortifications, maintaining that, though these fortifications might be advisable or even necessary if the fleet was absent from England, the assumption that it would be absent, leaving the enemy to operate freely in the Channel, was practically absurd. On the outbreak of the present war, he had been sent as Commander-in-Chief on the Leeward Islands station, where he had reduced Martinique, Saint Lucia, and Guadeloupe, and had shown a marvellous force of character and power of command. He was now. at the ripe age of sixty, sent out to command the Mediterranean fleet at a time when, by Hotham's mismanagement, the situation was every day becoming more critical. The Spanish Government, unable to resist the pressure of the French arms in the north of Spain, and not improbably influenced by money paid to Godov, had made peace with France, and would, it was believed, shortly form a defensive and offensive alliance; while the French fleet by itself was numerically superior to the English, which the requirements of the Channel, the West Indies, and other stations rendered it impossible to reinforce

On November 12th, 1795, Jervis in the Lively frigate

sailed from Spithead, and arrived at Gibraltar on the 23rd. He was there met by Rear-Admiral Man, who had been sent with a detached squadron to cruise off Cadiz, where seven French ships of the line and three frigates were lying in friendly association with the Spanish fleet. Jervis now confirmed Man's orders, and went on to join the fleet in San Fiorenzo Bay on the 29th. He had not improbably already formed the opinion that the fleet had seen too much of San Fiorenzo Bay, and before the smoke of the salute to his flag had blown away, made the signal to unmoor. It was the signal of a new order of things; of a strictness of discipline in all departments, of an activity on service and a restless energy, such as had never been equalled, and which brought the fleet to a point of unparalleled efficiency. And it was off an enemy's port that this reformation was carried on. In January the fleet took up its station off Toulon, the inshore squadron being seldom more than three miles from the entrance to the harbour, while the force under Jervis's personal command was, as a rule, smaller than that inside the harbour, which consisted of fifteen sail of the line. Jervis had indeed under his command twenty-five ships of the line; but seven of these were with Man off Cadiz, and others were employed on different and constantly varying services in different parts of the station. Troubridge, for instance, with the Culloden and some frigates, was sent to the Archipelago in December to look after Ganteaume, who had been allowed to escape from Toulon; and in March Vice-Admiral Waldegrave with five sail was at Tunis, bringing out the Nemesis frigate, which Ganteaume had captured and sent there.

By the occupation of the Riviera after the battle of Loano, Nelson's immediate work was brought to an abrupt conclusion, and he went to Leghorn to refit his ship. On January 19th, 1796, he joined the Admiral, whom he now saw for the first time, and was received, as he wrote, "not only with the greatest attention but with much apparent friendship." As the Agamemnon, after being three years almost always under way, was getting very crazy, Jervis offered him either the 90-gun ship St. George or the Zealous, a 74. Nelson preferred to remain in his old ship, being unwilling to leave the officers and men who had shared with him this long and arduous service. The very next day he was sent again into the Gulf of Genoa to prevent the passage of the enemy's troops by sea; and during the following months was almost constantly on the move, ranging the coast from Toulon to Leghorn. It was at this time his fixed idea that the French, having an apparent superiority, would try to force a passage by sea, and land their army towards Leghorn, when there would be nothing to stop their progress to Rome and Naples. They had in Toulon thirteen ships actually ready for sea, and four or five more in great forwardness. Nelson thought that they would endeavour to bring back the ships from Cadiz, and probably also others from L'Orient or Brest. "We may fight their fleet," he wrote, "but unless we can destroy them, their transports will push on and effect their landing. What will the French care for the loss of a few men-of-war? It is nothing, if they can get into Italy. This [is] the gold mine, and what, depend on it, they will push for."

We know now, what neither Jervis nor Nelson knew

then, that the appearance of the French fleet was a delusion, that the best ships had gone with Richery, and that those which remained were in bad condition, badly manned, and in no state to engage a fleet such as that under Jervis's command. The French officers were quite conscious of their absolute inferiority, and it does not appear that the idea which filled Nelson's mind was entertained by them; if they discussed it, it was at once given up as impracticable, and the advance by land determined on. Montenotte was fought on April 12th, and a few days later peace was concluded by the Sardinians. Everything seemed to show that Spain was going to join France, and in that case, Nelson thought, Naples would do the same. "Should all the powers in this country make peace," Nelson wrote to Sir Gilbert Elliot on May 16th, "and the French possess themselves of Leghorn and other places to cut off our supplies, Corsica will be the only tie to keep our great fleet in the Mediterranean; how far the conduct of those islanders, taken in a general scale, deserves that a fleet and army should be kept for their security, is well deserving of serious consideration."

In the end of March the Admiral ordered Nelson to wear a distinguishing pennant, constituting him, as it would be now called, a commodore of the second class; he actually hoisted it on April 4th. It did not, however, make any change in his duties: that was produced by the march of events; and on May 15th he wrote to Jervis: "Do you really think we are of any use here? If not, we may serve our country much more by being in other places. The Levant and coast of Spain call aloud for ships, and they are, I fancy, employed to no

purpose here; for unless the Austrians get possession of a point of land, we cannot stop the coasting trade." On the 18th he wrote again: "Money, provisions, and clothes the enemy have in abundance; and they command arsenals to supply their wants in arms and ammunition." Still, though he could not control the enemy, he could annoy. "I have got," he wrote on June 2nd, "the charts of Italy sent by the Directory to Bonaparte; also Maillebois' Wars in Italy, Vauban's Attack and Defence of Places, and Prince Eugene's History; all sent for the General. If Bonaparte is ignorant, the Directory, it would appear, wish to instruct him; pray God he may remain ignorant." And so the peculiar service on which he had been so long engaged came to an end.

The state of the Agamemnon rendered it necessary that she should go to England before the winter; and Nelson was almost daily expecting his promotion to flag rank, which he feared might put him on half-pay. Jervis virtually undertook that, if he was promoted, he should hoist his flag in the Mediterranean fleet, and meantime appointed him to the 74-gun ship Captain, her former captain, who was in bad health and anxious to go home, moving into the Agamemnon. Nelson joined the Captain on June 11th, and after two or three days at Genoa was sent to Leghorn, then threatened by the French. Captain Fremantle, in the Inconstant, was already there, and by great exertions had got all the English residents and their property safe on board ship and out of the port before the French entered. Nelson was now ordered to blockade it; for the better performance of which service, and at the request of Sir Gilbert Elliot, he took possession of the island of Elba. A few days later he was able to write: "The blockade of Leghorn is complete; not a vessel can go in or come out without my permission." This, he thought, would soon make the Grand Duke repent his admission of the French; and in fact the total stoppage of the trade, the great number of men thrown out of employment, and the absolute want of food, raised such a feeling that the French would probably have been driven out, had not the defeat of the Austrians at Lonato and Castiglione altered the position.

The interest then turned on the policy of Spain. For months Nelson's letters repeat that war is spoken of as probable. "I have my doubts as to it," he wrote to the Admiral, "but if it is, with your management I have no fears as to any fatal consequences. The Spanish fleet is ill manned, and worse officered, I fancy." And to his father, on August 18th: "The only consequence it can be to us may be the necessary evacuation of Corsica, and that our fleet will draw down the Mediterranean. The Dons will suffer in every way for their folly if they are really so foolhardy as to go to war to please the French." Corsica, he thought, must go in any case, for the French had a strong party in the island; many Corsicans were officers in the French army, and it was impossible to hinder French troops getting over by twenty or thirty at a time. As to the fleet, nobody, he thought, could have any fear under an admiral such as Jervis. The English had twenty-two ships of the line; France and Spain joined would not have more than thirty-five. "I will venture my life," he said, "that Sir John Jervis defeats them." But on August 27th he wrote to Elliot: "I own I cannot even

yet bring myself to believe that the Spaniards will go to war with us."

War was not, in fact, declared till October 5th, but for some weeks it was practically certain that it was going to be declared. It was known that Spain had concluded an offensive and defensive alliance with France. and that English ships had been stopped in Spanish ports. On September 25th Jervis received an order "to co-operate with the Viceroy in the evacuation of Corsica, and with the fleet to retreat down the Mediterranean." He lost no time in directing Nelson, whom on August 11th he had appointed a commodore of the first class, to take charge of the evacuation, which was carried out by October 19th. But although Nelson had anticipated the measure, as well as the possibility of leaving the Mediterranean, now, when the time came, the appearance of being driven out was very bitter to him. "I lament our present orders," he wrote, "in sackcloth and ashes, so dishonourable to the dignity of England, whose fleets are equal to meet the world in arms." Neither he nor the Admiral, however, considered Corsica tenable; and when, towards the beginning of November, Jervis received counter-orders to hold Corsica if not already evacuated, he replied that it was "a great blessing" that the evacuation had already taken place; for it would have been impossible to hold it for any length of time against the feeling of the Corsicans, and without a tenable post in the island.

The fleet was a different thing, and with that it was his intention to remain. With Elba as a base, and with his full numbers collected together, he felt himself quite equal to the task of making head against the combined fleet, even if they had combined; or of defeating either singly, if he could meet it on its way to combine. He had accordingly sent orders to Man, then at Gibraltar, to join him at once with his whole force; nor had he doubted that these orders would be obeyed, till, on November 11th, he learned that, on receiving them, Man had judged them impracticable and had taken his squadron to England. This serious defection left Jervis no alternative. With no interests to protect, no allies to defend, only fourteen ships of the line with which to meet thirty-eight, and no secure port to fall back on in case of reverse, his only available course was to retire on Gibraltar. And this, accordingly, he did.

## CHAPTER V

## ST. VALENTINE'S DAY

On December 1st, 1796, the fleet under Sir John Jervis anchored in Gibraltar Bay. A week later he received instructions to provide specially for the protection of Portugal, and to complete the evacuation of the Mediterranean by withdrawing the garrison from the island of Elba. This duty was entrusted to Nelson, who shifted his broad pennant to the Minerve frigate, and with the Blanche in company, sailed from Gibraltar on December 15th. Off Cartagena, on the evening of the 19th, they fell in with two Spanish frigates, which they engaged and captured. The one which struck to the Minerve was the Santa Sabina, commanded by Don Jacobo Stuart, a descendant of the Duke of Berwick. Scarcely was she taken possession of, when another frigate came towards them; it was then half-past three in the morning, and in the dark she was mistaken for the Blanche, till she hailed the Sabina in Spanish and, finding her in the possession of the English, fired a broadside into her. The Minerve had the Sabina in tow, but at once cast her off and engaged the stranger, which attempted to make off, followed by the Minerve. At daylight, however, the relation was changed. Two Spanish ships of the line and another frigate came on the scene; and the four now chased the Minerve, whose capture appeared imminent. She was saved by the presence of mind of Lieutenants Culverhouse and Hardy on board the Sabina, who reminded the Spaniards of their loss by hoisting the English colours with the Spanish below them. This was more than the Spaniards could stand, and the largest of the line-of-battle ships turned aside to recapture the frigate. But it was a couple of hours before she could do this; and though the others continued the chase, they were gradually left astern by the Minerve. The Blunche had not had time to take possession of her prize, and escaped unpursued.

On the 26th Nelson anchored at Porto Ferrajo, but found that General de Burgh, in command of the troops, did not think himself authorised to abandon the place without positive orders, though he was clear that no good was to be gained by staying, now that Naples had made peace with France and the English fleet had quitted the Mediterranean. Nelson accordingly collected the ships which had remained behind, embarked the naval stores, and, on receiving a final refusal from General de Burgh, left with him a few small craft under the command of Captain Fremantle in the Inconstant, and sailed on January 29th, 1797, Sir Gilbert Elliot and his staff taking a passage in the Minerve or other vessels of the squadron. After looking into Toulon where the French fleet still lay, and into Cartagena from which the Spanish fleet was absent, Nelson was in feverish haste to rejoin the Admiral, and on February 9th anchored at Gibraltar.

Three Spanish ships were lying at Algeziras, and

from these he received the two lieutenants Culverhouse and Hardy, who had been taken in the Sabina, in exchange for Don Jacobo Stuart, previously sent into Cartagena with a flag of truce. The Minerve sailed on the forenoon of the 11th, and was immediately followed by two of the Spanish ships, which hoped to make an easy capture of the frigate. By an accident they had success within their reach. Running through the Straits with a fair wind, the Minerve lost a man overboard. The jolly-boat was lowered, with Lieutenant Hardy and her crew on board, but the man had sunk, and was never seen again. The jolly-boat was now found to be in great danger, for the ship still held her way, and the easterly current was setting the boat fast astern, while the leading Spanish ship was coming up under a full spread of canvas. With an anxious eye Nelson took in the situation. "By God," he cried, "I'll not lose Hardy; back the mizen topsail!" As the ship came to, the Spaniards, astounded at the manœuvre, could only interpret it as meaning that she saw the English fleet coming in from the westward; and not choosing to incur the risk of meeting with them, hauled their wind and stood back to the eastward, while the Minerce, having picked up the jolly-boat, resumed her course, passed through the Spanish fleet during the night of the 12th, and on the 13th joined the Admiral off Cape St. Vincent, giving him the news of the near approach of the Spaniards. The same afternoon Nelson shifted his broad pennant back to the Captain; and at daybreak the next morning the Spanish fleet was seen some fifteen or twenty miles to the southward. The weather was extremely hazy, and it was nearly eleven before the look-out vessel could

signal that there were twenty-five ships of the line; two were presumably shrouded in the fog, for there were really twenty-seven.

Since coming to Gibraltar the English fleet had received several important reinforcements to make up for the deficiency caused by Man's absence; but a succession of untoward losses had prevented its numbers being increased. Two ships had been totally lost; one, with a great lump of rock driven through her bottom, had been sent to England; two others had been docked at Lisbon. It was thus that, on the morning of St. Valentine's Day, February 14th, 1797, when Jervis met the Spanish fleet on its way northwards, with the intention of joining the French at Brest, he had with him only fifteen sail of the line; and though nine of them had been subject for the past year to his iron discipline, the odds against him still appeared excessive. But he knew that the state of affairs at home rendered it necessary at all hazards to prevent the Spaniards from going to Brest. "A victory is very essential to England at this moment," he was heard to mutter as he paced the Victory's quarterdeck; then, as he drew near and saw the enemy's fleet, with the wind at west by south, straggling across the line of his advance, he formed his fleet in line of battle towards the south, and steered for a gap between two of the enemy's divisions, so as to cut off seven of their ships to leeward. The western division was running down to join them, and two three-decked ships succeeded in doing so. The rest, seeing that they were too late, wore all together and stood to the north, firing some distant shots at the English line as they passed on opposite tacks. But as the leading ship, the Culloden, commanded

by Troubridge, Nelson's old companion in the Seahorse, came into the wake of the Spaniards, Jervis made the signal to tack in succession; and the Culloden, fully prepared for the order, came round at once and fell among the rear of the retreating Spaniards.

It has often been pointed out that the particular manœuvre which Jervis had ordered was a tactical blunder; for, according to the signal, each of his ships was bound to stand on till she reached the spot where the Culloden had tacked before she could follow. This gave the enemy time to get some considerable distance ahead, so that, to all appearance, the action would end in a desultory interchange of firing, without any decisive result. There are many who think that what Jervis should have signalled in the circumstances was to tack all together, that is, each ship where she actually was when the signal was made; and had this been done, there can be little doubt that the battle would have been much sharper and more decisive than it was. That it was so in any degree was due not to Jervis but to Nelson, whose ship, the Captain, was in the rear of the fleet, the last but two; and seeing that by the manœuvre ordered, not only could the Captain not get into action, but also that the Spaniards, as they passed clear of the sternmost ships, were bearing up to run down to leeward and join the other division, he took on himself, not for the first time, to disobey the order, wore out of the line, and stood on the other tack to meet the Spanish Admiral in the Santisima Trinidad, the largest ship then affoat, which, as well as the other ships with him, he compelled to haul to the wind again. delay enabled the Culloden and the other leading ships to come up; and Jervis, partly recognising his mistake, signalled the *Excellent*, the rearmost ship, also to tack. The action thus became more general. Two of the Spanish ships struck their colours and were taken possession of. The rest fled.

After engaging the Santisima Trinidad and several others, the Captain was then in close action with the San Nicolas of 84 guns. She had suffered much in her rigging, and was apparently hard pressed by her huge antagonist, when Collingwood in the Excellent, passing between the two, poured a tremendous broadside into the Spaniard at a distance of only a few feet. The San Nicolas luffed up, possibly to prevent the Excellent fouling her; and in so doing fell on board the three-decker San Josef, which apparently bore up at the same moment to avoid the fire of the Prince George; and the two, having already suffered severely, lay practically helpless. The Captain also was almost unmanageable, "her foremast gone, not a sail, shroud, or rope left, her wheel shot away"; and Nelson, seeing her unable to follow the flying Spaniards, ordered the helm to be put a-starboard and called for the boarders. As the Captain's spritsail yard hooked in the mizen rigging of the San Nicolas, Berry, who had been first lieutenant of the Agamemnon and the Captain, and having been promoted shortly before, was now serving as a volunteer, sprang into her mizen chains and scrambled on board, closely followed by Lieutenant Pierson of the Sixty-Ninth Regiment and his soldiers. The upper quarter gallery window was dashed in, and Nelson himself with others jumped through. A few pistol-shots were fired, but the resistance was little more than nominal; and while Berry on the poop hauled

down the Spanish flag, Nelson with Pierson and some of his men went forward, where the officers, already prisoners to some of the *Captain's* seamen, delivered up their swords.

At this moment some muskets were fired from the stern-walk of the San Josef, and Nelson, directing the soldiers to fire into her stern, called for more men and proceeded to board the three-decker. Berry assisted him into her mizen chains, when a Spanish officer looked over the side and said they surrendered. Nelson was quickly on the quarter-deck, where the captain presented his sword, saying that the admiral was below, dving. But the other Spanish officers were called up and delivered their swords, which, wrote Nelson, "as I received, I gave to William Fearney, one of my bargemen, who put them under his arm with the greatest sang-froid." The Victory and the other ships, as they passed the Captain, cheered her; and when Nelson, after shifting his broad pennant to the Irresistible, went on board the Victory, the Admiral, according to Nelson's own account, "received me on the quarter-deck, and having embraced me, said he could not sufficiently thank me, and used every kind expression, which could not fail to make me happy."

After four years' service in the Agamemnon and the Captain, Nelson's reputation as a man of courage and ability was very well established; but this day had shown him in a still more favourable light, and had presented him as a man no less quick to discern than prompt to act. It was thus that Collingwood, who had long been on terms of intimate friendship with him, wrote the next day: "It added very much to the satis-

faction which I felt in thumping the Spaniards, that I released you a little. The highest rewards are due to you and Culloden; you formed the plan of attack, we were only accessories to the dons' ruin; for had they got on the other tack, they would have been sooner joined, and the business would have been less complete." But more than this, the battle brought his name prominently before the country. The news of the victory reached London on the afternoon of March 3rd, and the same evening a vote of thanks to Jervis and all under his command was carried by acclamation in the House of Commons. An intolerable weight was taken off the country; and as people began to ask about particulars they learned that a captain of a 74 had carried by boarding first an 80 and then a 112-gun ship, and that his coxswain had collected the swords of the Spanish officers under his arm "as if he was making up a faggot." It was this, the apparent disproportion of the combatants to the magnitude of the results, that caught the popular fancy, and Nelson was at once installed as the ideal of a naval hero. Even now, misled by exaggerated descriptions and imaginative pictures, it is very commonly supposed that he captured the two Spaniards in a desperate hand-to-hand conflict amid the clash of cutlasses and dint of tomahawks: people do not stop now, any more than they did then, to reflect that what Nelson did was, with great resolution and vigour, but without any serious fighting, to take forcible possession of two beaten ships, which but for his prompt action would very probably have got away, as the Santisima Trinidad and other beaten ships actually did. Nelson himself, who was by no means given to minimise his exploits, did not

claim to have done anything more, and though he wrote: "There is a saying in the fleet too flattering for me to omit telling,—'Nelson's patent bridge for boarding first-rates,' alluding to my passing over an enemy's 80-gun ship," he wrote also more modestly: "I pretend not to say that these two ships might not have fell had I not boarded them; but truly it was far from certain but they might have forged into the Spanish fleet as the other two ships did."

There is no question that the capture of the San Nicolas and San Josef did illustrate Nelson's genius, though not in the way that fancy has represented. Undaunted courage of course he had, but so also had scores of officers and men in the fleet; the quick perception that the ships were beaten, that the Captain was useless in the chase, the determination not to lie idle when anything could be done,—all this was Nelson's own. But a higher and finer display of the same quickness of perception, the same prompt resolution, with the utter fearlessness of responsibility, was given in the wearing out of the line without orders, and throwing himself, all unsupported, in the way of the Santisima Trinidad and the whole of the Spanish fleet. The Captain might be crushed or sunk, -taken, he knew, she could not be: but whatever happened to her, he ensured sufficient delay to permit the Culloden, Blenheim, Prince George, O in and others to come up. To see and understand this, however, required some knowledge of ships and fleets and naval tactics; while the most ignorant could see and anderstand the grandeur of one ship capturing two oth rs, each bigger than herself, and were pleased to represent Nelson as a man whose one idea of a battle was to plunge blindfold into the thickest of it, trusting to the fortune of war to bring him well out of it.

Much has been written of the very inadequate account of the battle and of Nelson's share in it which was given in Jervis's despatch. It may be that, as has been said, there was some jealousy on the part of Sir Robert Calder, the Captain of the Fleet; but Jervis was not the man to be guided by a Calder, or by any one else, in a way that his own judgment did not approve; and it may very well be that he considered it unbecoming to enter into the details of the battle in his public letter. It had certainly not been usual to do so. In a private letter to the First Lord he rendered full justice to Nelson's gallantry, though still without entering into any detail; and in all probability Lord Spencer first learned what was actually done from Sir Gilbert Elliot, who had witnessed the battle from the deck of the Lively frigate, which after the battle carried him and Calder and the Admiral's despatches to England.

Rewards and promotions were showered on the victors. Jervis, who had previously been notified of the King's intention to raise him to the peerage as a baron, was now made an earl, the King himself suggesting the title of St. Vincent. Nelson received the freedom of the City of London in a gold casket and a sword of honour. The city of Norwich also conferred its freedom, at once as a recognition of his valour and in return for the Spanish Rear-Admiral's sword, which he presented to the corporation. By the King he was made a Knight of the Bath, an honour then at least equal, probably superior, in social prestige to the Grand Cross of the present day. A baronetcy would have been conferred on

him, but in conversation with Elliot, Nelson had expressed a very distinct objection to receiving any hereditary title which his means would not allow him to keep up; and had very plainly suggested that he would much prefer the order of the Bath. There is a common impression that his promotion to the rank of rear-admiral was also a reward for his splendid conduct on St. Valentine's Day. This is a mistake. Neither then nor for nearly a hundred years before was promotion to flagrank a reward for conspicuous merit, but, following certain more or less clearly defined rules of service, was conferred according to seniority on the list of postcaptains. Nelson, a captain of more than seventeen years' standing, had been close to the top of the list for several months, and for more than a year had been apprehensive that his promotion, which must come with the first batch, would put him on half-pay. Now, when it did come, it was dated only six days after the battle, a fortnight before the news reached England.

After refitting at Lisbon, Nelson, with his broad pennant still in the *Irresistible*, was sent with a small squadron to cruise between Cape St. Vincent and the African coast, on the look-out for the Viceroy of Mexico, who was expected to arrive at Cadiz with three ships of the line and a large treasure. Nelson, writing to his wife as he put to sea, said: "The Spanish war will give us a cottage and a piece of ground, which is all I want. I shall come one day or other laughing back, when we will retire from the busy scenes of life: I do not, however, intend to be a hermit; the dons will give us a little money." His anticipations were not, however, to be fulfilled this cruise, for either the report was un-

founded, or the Viceroy, having intelligence of the war, postponed his departure. On March 24th he again shifted his broad pennant to the *Captain*, which had refitted at Lisbon; and on the afternoon of April 1st he was joined by the Admiral and the fleet. They brought him the news of his promotion to the rank of rearadmiral, and the same afternoon, at three o'clock, he hoisted his flag on board the *Captain*.

For a fortnight longer Nelson continued off Cadiz, and was then again sent to bring away the troops from Porto Ferrajo, if indeed they were not already on the way under the escort of the Inconstant. He had previously suggested to the Admiral that the Viceroy might have gone to Teneriffe, and that if so, those soldiers with a detachment of the fleet might capture the island without much difficulty. When, however, he returned to Gibraltar, in company with the convoy which he met near the southern end of Corsica, Jervis, now Earl of St. Vincent, had apparently learnt that the Vicerov had not gone to Teneriffe; and the troops, being under orders for England, were sent on at once. As it was found necessary for the Captain to go to England to be docked, Nelson with Captain Miller moved into the Theseus, and resumed the blockade of Cadiz, which was continued for the next two months, enlivened by occasional skirmishes with the Spanish gunboats or launches. In one of these, on July 3rd, Nelson thought that "his personal courage was more conspicuous than at any other period of his life." His barge, containing thirteen men all told, including himself and Fremantle, was boarded by a Spanish gunboat with a crew of thirty, eighteen of whom were killed after a severe

hand-to-hand fight, several wounded, and the boat taken. Perhaps the courage which was most conspicuous was that of John Sykes, the coxswain of the barge, who, after parrying several blows meant for Nelson, stopped one with his own head, which was either harder than the run of heads, or the cutlass had turned in the hand; for Sykes, though severely wounded, was not killed till two years later, when a fragment of a bursting cannon found a mortal part.

It was during this time that the Commander-in-Chief was sternly engaged in repressing the mutinous spirit which had shown itself in the fleet. The Theseus was supposed to be one of the most deeply infected; it is therefore notable that within three weeks of Nelson's hoisting his flag on board her, a paper professing to be signed by the ship's company was dropped on the quarter-deck :- "Success attend Admiral Nelson! God bless Captain Miller! We thank them for the officers they have placed over us. We are happy and comfortable, and will shed every drop of blood in our veins to support them, and the name of the Theseus shall be immortalised as high as the Captain's." From that time every appearance of insubordination vanished; and the Theseus, which continued under Miller's command till his lamentable death in 1799, was as well disciplined and in as good order as any ship in the fleet.

With the vigorous manner in which Lord St. Vincent stamped out the mutiny then threatening the most dangerous consequences, we are not now concerned. Nelson in the inshore squadron was clear of the trouble; but one expression of his sentiments is of importance as showing how utterly false is the idea that he was a man

to keep things easy by letting those under his command have their own way. For in fact "the iron grip under the velvet glove" was never more strikingly illustrated than in the character of Nelson. Two men of the St. George were tried for mutiny on Saturday, July 8th; were found guilty, and sentenced to death. St. Vincent had determined that the sentence, if passed, should be carried out without delay. The men would have been hanged on the Saturday, but that the court-martial did not finish till after sunset; they were actually hanged at nine o'clock on Sunday morning; whereupon Vice-Admiral Thompson wrote the Admiral a very strong letter "censuring him for profaning the Sabbath." Nelson, on the other hand, wrote: "I congratulate you on the finish, as it ought, of the St. George's business, and I (if I may be permitted to say so) very much approve of its being so speedily carried into execution, even although it is Sunday. The particular situation of the service requires extraordinary measures. I hope this will end all the disorders in our fleet; had there been the same determined spirit at home, I do not believe it would have been half so bad"; and to the Captain of the Fleet he added: "I am sorry that you should have to differ with Vice-Admiral Thompson; but had it been Christmas Day instead of Sunday I would have executed them. We know not what might have been hatched by a Sunday's grog: now your discipline is safe."

More congenial work was, however, preparing for him. The Admiral had received intelligence that a richly-laden ship from Manila had put into Santa Cruz, and was there waiting for an opportunity to return to Spain. As Nelson had before suggested the possibility of an

attack on Teneriffe, St. Vincent now recurred to it and proposed to Nelson to carry it out. Nelson readily undertook to do so, though the scheme was no longer his, which had been based on his having the co-operation of a large body of troops. This was now not to be had; and though a squadron of three ships of the line and three frigates was detached for the service, it was found that the attempt was, as Nelson had supposed, impracticable without a much stronger landing-party than they could muster. They were off the Bay of Santa Cruz on July 21st, and as the Governor refused to capitulate, the attack was ordered for the night of the 24th under cover of the darkness. Unfortunately the darkness told against the assailants. Most of the boats missed the mole, and were tossed on shore through a raging surf which stove the boats and wet the ammunition. The few who landed at the mole were exposed to a heavy and well-judged fire. Nelson, in the act of landing, was struck on the right elbow by a grape-shot. He fell back into the arms of his stepson, Josiah Nisbet, at this time a lad of seventeen and lieutenant of the Theseus, who took him back to the ship, where the shattered arm was amputated.

On shore the position of the assailants was desperate; and when daylight showed the scanty force of the English surrounded by some eight thousand Spaniards under arms and with five field-pieces, Troubridge, on whom the command devolved, felt it necessary to negotiate. Samuel Hood, Lord Hood's namesake and cousin, a good linguist and at this time captain of the Zealous, took a flag of truce and proposed that the Spaniards should find boats and the English should withdraw, pledging

themselves to commit no further hostilities. The Governor thought the English ought to surrender as prisoners of war; but Hood replied that Captain Troubridge had directed him to say that if the terms offered were not accepted in five minutes, he would set the town on fire and attack the Spaniards at the point of the bayonet. The Spanish force was presumably in great part a pretence, local militia without training or courage, and the Governor judged it better to accept the terms than force on a conflict with desperate men. He did more, and with a liberality not unprecedented in our wars with Spain, "directed our wounded men to be received into the hospitals, and all our people to be supplied with the best provisions that could be procured, and made it known that the ships were at liberty to send on shore and purchase whatever refreshments they were in want of during the time they might lie off the island." On the 27th, the officers and men were all brought on board, and the squadron, already under way, made sail to rejoin the Admiral.

It was the same day, that is, within about sixty hours from the time of his arm being amputated, that Nelson wrote to Lord St. Vincent,—a few lines only, interesting as his first attempt with his left hand—asking that his stepson might be promoted in the vacancy caused by the death, at Santa Cruz, of Captain Bowen of the Terpsichore. As the boy was at this time barely seventeen, the practical elasticity of the rule laid down in the Instructions, that no one should be made a lieutenant till he was twenty, is proved by the facts that Nelson did not see any impropriety in asking that this boy, already a lieutenant, should be made a commander;

and that St. Vincent, in many ways the embodiment of strict service, saw no impropriety in granting the request, and promoting the boy to be commander of the Dolphin hospital-ship. At the same time he ordered the Seahorse, whose captain, Fremantle, moved into her from the Inconstant, had also been wounded at Teneriffe, to take Nelson to England. The Theseus joined the Admiral off Cadiz on August 16th, when Nelson wrote: "A left-handed admiral will never again be considered as useful, therefore the sooner I get to a very humble cottage the better, and make room for a better man to serve the State"; and the next day the Seahorse sailed for Spithead, where she anchored on September 1st.

Nelson went at once to Bath, where his wife already was; and for several weeks there, or afterward in London, suffered intense agony from his wound. It appears that in the hurry and in the murky atmosphere of the Theseus's cockpit the surgeon had tied a nerve with the artery; as the result of which the pain was often extreme, till in due time the ligature came away; and even then the suffering left a neuralgic disposition, the ill effects of which were never removed. The story is told that when the news of Duncan's victory at Camperdown, won on October 11th, reached London, Nelson was occupying apartments in Bond Street. He had been in great pain all day, and had gone to bed after taking a dose of laudanum, when the mob, surging through the street. knocked angrily at the door to ask why the house was not illuminated. The servant told them that Sir Horatio Nelson was there, badly wounded and trying to sleep. Already his was a name to conjure with. "You will hear no more of us," replied the spokesmen of the party; and we are left to believe that they took measures to prevent any further disturbance in that quarter. By December 8th Nelson was able to send to the incumbent of St. George's, Hanover Square, this notice, to be used on the following Sunday: "An officer desires to return thanks to Almighty God for his perfect recovery from a severe wound, and also for the many mercies bestowed upon him."

Some weeks before this he had found out that the Admiralty did not consider a left-handed admiral necessarily useless, especially when he was the popular hero of St. Valentine's Day. It had been already decided that the Foudroyant, a fine 80-gun ship, then on the stocks but to be launched in January, should be commissioned in February for his flag, and that her captain should be Berry, the old first lieutenant of the Agamemnon, who had been posted for his distinguished valour off Cape St. Vincent. It was afterwards found that the Foudroyant could not be ready so soon as had been expected; and, as the Admiralty were anxious that Nelson should rejoin Lord St. Vincent without delay. and he himself was eager to be affoat again, it was arranged that for the time he should hoist his flag on board the Vanguard of 74 guns, Berry going with him as his flag-captain. He sailed from St. Helen's on April 10th, 1798, anchored in the Tagus on the 23rd, and on the last day of the month joined the Commanderin-Chief off Cadiz

## CHAPTER VI

## THE BATTLE OF THE NILE

IT was already known that a very considerable French force was being got together at Toulon, though its object or destination remained a secret; and Lord St. Vincent at once determined to send Nelson with a small squadron up the Mediterranean, to try if he could find out anything about it. The rumours were various. Sicily, Corfu, Portugal, and Ireland were all mentioned as its possible aims; it was, perhaps, intended to join a Spanish force at Cartagena. Nelson was instructed to send off a frigate or sloop to the Admiral so soon as he discovered anything; but in any case to take care that the enemy did not pass him, so as to prevent his rejoining the fleet.

With two line-of-battle ships, the Orion and Alexander, besides the Vanguard, three frigates and a sloop, Nelson sailed from Gibraltar on May 8th. Ten days later he wrote from off Cape Sicie that there were in Toulon fifteen sail of the line apparently ready for sea, that there were many transports, and that large bodies of troops were daily arriving at the port; about twelve thousand men were already embarked; the time of sailing was very differently reported; and as to further

particulars,—"they order their matters so well in France that all is secret."

The next day, May 18th, it came on to blow; and early on the morning of the 20th the Vanguard's masts, —the main topmast, the mizen topmast, the foremast went over the side one after the other; the bowsprit, badly sprung, and the lower main and mizen masts were all that remained. The gale blew very hard all day, and the Vanguard laboured exceedingly. Alexander took her in tow, and the Orion, finding the anchorage of San Pietro at the southern end of Sardinia, piloted her in. The three line-of-battle ships anchored there at noon on the 23rd. The frigates and small craft, by stress of weather, had parted company; and not finding their consorts, and concluding that the Vanguard would be obliged to return to Gibraltar, went back to the fleet; nor did Nelson see them again during the anxious months that were to follow. In four days, by the united exertions of the three ships, the Vanguard was refitted,-a main topmast for a foremast, a top-gallant mast for a topmast, and everything else reduced in proportion - and the squadron again at sea. Four days later it was back off Toulon; but the French fleet was no longer there. The same northerly gale which had proved so disastrous to the Vanguard, was, a little to the eastward, a fine fresh breeze, with which the French expedition had put to sea and disappeared. No further information could be obtained, and for some days Nelson vainly sought for it along the coast of Italy, being unwilling to go south without some definite purpose.

Meanwhile the Government, having also heard of this threatening armament at Toulon, had sent out a strong reinforcement to Lord St. Vincent, with instructions to detach a sufficient squadron up the Mediterranean under the command of a "discreet flag officer," suggesting that the fittest for the service would be Sir Horatio Nelson. The suggestion came directly from the First Lord of the Admiralty, who had been prompted by Sir Gilbert Elliot and by the King himself, probably at the request of the Duke of Clarence. St. Vincent's own opinion was quite in accord with the suggestion, and the more so as Nelson was already in the Mediterranean. A squadron of ten 74-gun ships and the 50-gun ship Leander was therefore detached under the command of Captain Troubridge, and joined Nelson on the evening of June 7th, bringing him instructions to proceed in quest of the enemy's armament, the object of which was supposed to be either an attack upon Naples and Sicily, the conveyance of an army to some part of the coast of Spain for the purpose of marching towards Portugal, or to pass through the Straits with the view of proceeding to Ireland. On falling in with it, he was to use his utmost endeavours to take, sink, burn, or destroy it; and he was "to remain upon this service so long as the provisions of his squadron would last, or as long as he might be enabled to obtain supplies from any of the ports of the Mediterranean."

Subsequent events give a peculiar and important significance to the wording of this order. It should therefore be especially noticed that he was enjoined to remain so long as he could obtain supplies; to obey this order not only in the letter but in the spirit, by treating as hostile any ports within the Mediterranean where provisions, etc., should be refused; and, definitely and distinctly,

to exact supplies of whatever he might be in want of from the territories of the Grand Duke of Tuscany, the King of the Two Sicilies, and others. Nothing can be clearer or more precise than the authority given to Nelson to help himself in case of a refusal; and those have assuredly known little of Nelson's character who have supposed that he would have preferred disobeying his orders and neglecting the special service entrusted to him, to bringing pressure or even force to bear on a doubtful ally. He, however, determined to ascertain at once what he had to depend on; and on June 12th wrote from off Elba to Sir William Hamilton, the English ambassador at Naples, requesting him to assure the King of his determination to support him and also to obtain clear answers to these questions: Are the ports of Naples and Sicily open to His Majesty's fleet? Have the Governors orders for our free admission, and for us to be supplied with whatever we may want? On the 14th he wrote again, to the effect that he had just learned that the French fleet had been seen off Trapani on the 4th; and that if it was now in any port of Sicily, he would at once attack it. He wanted pilots, as well as an answer to his questions. "I send Captain Troubridge to communicate with your Excellency, and, as Captain Troubridge is in full possession of my confidence, I beg that whatever he says may be considered as coming from me."

In a letter to Lord Spencer, dated on the 15th off Ponza, we get the first hint of what was, and no doubt had already been, the dominant idea in his mind,—that the French were aiming at Egypt; an idea the more remarkable as entirely foreign to the instructions

or suggestions he had received from the Commander-in-Chief. After saying that they had been seen on the 4th off Trapani steering to the eastward, he went on: "If they pass Sicily, I shall believe they are going on their scheme of possessing Alexandria and getting troops to India, a plan concerted with Tippoo Saib, by no means so difficult as might at first view be imagined; but be they bound to the Antipodes, your lordship may rely that I will not lose a moment in bringing them to action, and endeavour to destroy their transports. I hope," he continued, "the King of Naples will send me some frigates; for mine parted company on May 20th, and have not joined me since. . . . I shall make sail and pass the Faro of Messina the moment Captain Troubridge returns."

Although his first letter to Sir William Hamilton was dated off Elba on June 12th, and the second, introducing Troubridge, off Civita Vecchia on the 14th, the Mutine brig, in which Troubridge took a passage, did not part company till the 16th, when she pushed on into the Bay of Naples, anchoring there the next morning while the fleet lay to in the offing. About eight o'clock on the morning of the 17th, Troubridge, accompanied by Hardy, now commander of the Mutine, landed and called on Sir William Hamilton, who took him at once to see General Acton, the Neapolitan Prime Minister. Troubridge was much pleased with Acton's answers to his straightforward questions; and on his expressing a desire for an order to the Commanders-in-Chief of all the ports in Sicily to supply the ships with provisions and, in case of an action, to permit them to land the sick and wounded, the General gave him such an order in the name of His Sicilian Majesty, signed by himself and addressed to all the several governors of the different ports in Sicily. In addition to this order, Troubridge took off a copy of a letter to Hamilton from the Marquis de Gallo, the Neapolitan Foreign Secretary, dated June 12th, to the effect that they could not venture to take a decided part while the treaty with Austria was still unsettled, and in view of the possibility of the withdrawal of the English fleet; but that by the King's express orders the English squadron would receive every welcome, facility and advantage compatible with the circumstances. He was also able to give Nelson the information that the French fleet had passed Sicily and was attacking Malta; with news from Pantellaria that a French ship had been making inquiries there relative to the report of a British squadron's being in the Mediterranean, which they thought could not be true. In Sicily they had asked the same, and been told that for two years British colours had not been seen there, except on board some Gibraltar privateers.

Hoping to catch the French fleet unawares before Malta, Nelson made sail at once, and passed through the Strait of Messina, writing to Hamilton on the next day, June 18th, that the Cabinet was determined to keep the fleet in the Mediterranean, and that he might assure the King of Naples that he should not withdraw but by positive orders or the impossibility of procuring supplies. His letter concluded with a complimentary message to Lady Hamilton, and the expression of a hope to be presented to her "crowned with laurel or cypress," referring, with a strange misappropriation of language,

to the speech of Opdam as he sailed to the battle of June 4th, 1665.

Off Cape Passaro, on the 22nd, Nelson learned that Malta had tamely surrendered to the French on the 15th, and that on the 16th the whole fleet, consisting of sixteen sail of the line, with frigates, bombs, etc., and near three hundred transports, had left the island. As Sicily was not their object, and as, from the time they sailed, the wind blew fresh from the west, Nelson judged that their destination was eastward, and was convinced that their object was to possess themselves of some port in Egypt and to fix themselves at the head of the Red Sea, in order to get a formidable army into India. And thus, without any direct intelligence but strong in his conviction, and assured by learning from Troubridge that it was shared by Hamilton and Acton, he sailed for Alexandria, hoping to come across the French fleet on the way, but beginning to think, as days passed and he saw nothing of them, that they must have heard from Naples of the approach of an English fleet and have turned aside, perhaps to Corfu.

When, therefore, he arrived off Alexandria, and found that the French were neither there nor had been heard of, he at once reverted to the other idea, and imagined that they must have turned up the Adriatic or the Archipelago, or had perhaps kept a more northerly course and were hugging the Syrian coast. Wherever they were, it was his business to find them; and sailing northwards, he searched along the coast of Syria and then along the coast of Caramania; but neither by sight nor inquiry could he learn anything of the French fleet.

It was now getting towards the end of July, nearly

three months since he had left the Admiral. The water was beginning to run short, and the men to need fresh provisions. Relying therefore on the order which he had received from Acton, and empowered to use force if necessary, he made straight for Syracuse, and on the afternoon of the 19th ran into the harbour, anchored, moored, and sent the boats on shore for water, -all without paying any attention to the Governor's remonstrances beyond forwarding him Acton's letter. The Governor was in some doubt how far this, irregular in form and wanting in precision, warranted him in permitting such a flagrant breach of the treaty with France, by the terms of which not more than four foreign ships of war were to be admitted at one time to any Neapolitan port. He realised, however, the utter impossibility of getting rid of his visitors before their wants were satisfied; as the town lay exposed to their broadsides, force was clearly out of the question; and so, salving his conscience with continued remonstrances, which seem to have put Nelson in a very bad temper, he sanctioned an unrestrained trade in fruit and vegetables, bullocks, and wine, as well as, under the rose, in acquarzente, if we may judge by the number of men in the fleet who were flogged for drunkenness during the short stay.

The squadron left Syracuse on July 25th; on the 28th, being off the Gulf of Coron, Nelson learned that the French fleet had been seen about four weeks before, steering towards the south-east from Candia; and satisfied that, after all, they had gone to Egypt, he at once made sail for Alexandria. On the evening of the 31st, as he was nearing that port, he sent the Alexander and Swiftsure ahead to reconnoitre; but at noon on August 1st,

being in sight of Alexandria and seeing that, while the harbour was full of transports, the men-of-war were not there, he altered course to the eastward. A little before three the *Zealous* signalled that she saw sixteen sail of the line at anchor; they were, in fact, thirteen sail of the line and four large frigates lying close inshore in Aboukir Bay.

During the many weeks that he had been groping for this fleet, Nelson had had frequent opportunities of explaining to the several captains with him the plan on which he meant to engage at sea or at anchor; and now, as they saw the enemy before them, very few signals were sufficient to let them know what they had to do. The wind was variable from north-west to north-northwest, and the French fleet was moored in a broken line following very closely the five-fathom line of soundings. about three miles from the shore; so that while the general direction of their line was from north-west to south-east, that of the van was really from about westnorth-west to east-south-east, and of the rear from about north-north-west to south-south-east. It would thus seem as if the van of the French fleet was in a bow and quarter line rather than in line ahead, and it has been so described by some writers who have not noticed that, in preparing for action, the French ships got into line ahead, either by putting springs on their cables or letting fall another anchor. But the general effect was that their line was approximately in the line of the wind; and as Nelson drew near enough to understand the position, he signalled that it was his intention to attack the enemy's van and centre. It was then nearly five o'clock. He had previously made the signal to prepare to anchor by the stern with springs on the cables; and a little before six he made the signal to form line of battle as most convenient, ahead and astern of the Admiral. He had with him at the moment only ten ships of 74 guns; the Culloden, which had been towing a small prize laden with wine, was some miles astern; and still farther astern were the Alexander and Swiftsure, with the little Leander.

And now, before the battle begins, it may be well to say a few words as to the relative force of the two fleets. With the exception of the Leander, the English ships were all of 74 guns, of the smaller class, carrying 32pounders on the lower deck and 18-pounders on the main or, as it was then called, the upper deck; the Leander had 24 and 12 pounders respectively. Most of them had been for upwards of a year in commission, many of them for upwards of two years, and under the iron rule of Jervis had been brought into a state of the greatest efficiency. The following is a list of them in the order they got into as they formed line of battle, the order in which they went into action. The Culloden, attempting a short cut, struck on a rock at the eastern end of the shoal running out from Aboukir, or, as it has since been called, Nelson Island, remained fast, and had no part in the fight.

	Ships' Names.	Captains.	Men.	K.	w.	Total.
1	Goliath	Thomas Foley	590	21	41	62
2	Zealous	Sam. Hood	590	1	7	8
3	Orion	Sir J. Saumarez	590	13	29	42
4	Audacious .	Davidge Gould	590	1	35	36
5	Theseus	R. W. Miller	590	5	30	35
6	Vanguard .	RAdml. Sir H. Nelson Ed. Berry	595	30	75	105
7	Minotaur .	Thomas Louis	640	<b>2</b> 3	64	87
1 8	Defence	John Peyton	590	4	11	15
9	Bellerophon	H. d'E. Darby	590	49	148	- 197
10	Majestic	G. B. Westcott	590	50	143	193
11	Swiftsure .	Ben. Hallowell	590	7	22	29
12	Alexander .	A. J. Ball	590	14	58	72
13	Leander	T. B. Thompson	343	0	14	14
14	Culloden .	T. Troubridge	•••		•••	•••
l			1			

In nominal force the French were far superior, as appears from the following list, in which the ships are numbered from the van or north-west, to the rear or south-east.

	Ships' Names.	 Guns.	Men.	Result of the Battle.	
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13	Guerrier Conquérant		74 74 74 74 74 80 120 80 74 74 74	700 700 700 700 700 800 1010 800 700 700 800 700	Taken Taken Taken Taken Taken Taken Blown up Taken Taken Taken Escaped Burnt
14 15 16	Sérieuse	•	36 36 40	300 300 400	Sunk Burnt Escaped
17	Justice		40	400	Escaped

When we remember that in tonnage and weight of metal a French 74-gun ship was greater by one-fifth than an English, that a French 80-gun ship was, in the same way, greater than an English 74 by one third, and that the 120-gun ship was equal to two English 74's, the superiority of the French will appear very marked. It was, however, more apparent than real. Notwithstanding the fashion of the present day, our forefathers were never convinced that 40-pounders were a more efficient armament than 32's, and believed that they could not be worked so quickly even with a much greater number of men. But independently of this, many of the French ships were old; some were barely seaworthy, and could only carry a reduced armament. The Conquérant is said to have had only 18 and 12 pounders on her lower and main decks respectively. The Guerrier and Peuple Souverain had been condemned the previous year. The men, too, were newly raised. Many of them were not seamen; they had not been trained to the exercise of the guns; they were in a bad state of discipline; and their numbers are said to have been far below the established complements, the deficiency while the fleet was at sea being filled up with soldiers who landed with the army of invasion. French writers have also laid stress on the fact that when the English were first sighted, their boats were on shore watering. But as that was about two o'clock in the afternoon, as the boats were at once recalled, and as the action did not begin till near seven, it is difficult to see that the circumstance had that importance which has been attributed to it. On the other hand, many men had certainly been drafted from the transports and storeships at Alexandria; and, at the last moment, the greater part of the frigates' crews were distributed among the ships of the line of battle; so that, in all probability, the numbers actually on board were not much short of the establishment, and were beyond doubt considerably greater than those of the English.

As the headmost ships of the English line drew near, the French opened on them a fire which, from their position nearly end on, they were unable to return; nor was it intended they should do so. But about twenty minutes to seven, the Goliath, passing across the bows of the Guerrier, barely clearing her jib-boom, poured in a terrific broadside, and rounding to, let go her stern anchor abreast, but inshore of the French ship. She had, however, too much way on, and only brought up abreast of the Conquérant. Her place was immediately taken by the Zealous, after she also had discharged her broadside into the Guerrier's bow. The Orion, following, passed inshore of the Zealous and Goliath, ran foul of the Sérieuse, which, disabled by the shock, drifted on to the shore in a sinking state, and anchored abreast of the Peuple Souverain. Like the others, the Theseus, - every gun loaded with two, some with three, round-shot, -reserved her fire till she had the Guerrier's masts in a line, with the jib-boom about six feet clear of her own rigging. Her broadside brought down the Guerrier's masts: and then, passing between her and the Zealous, and as close as possible on the offside of the Goliath, she anchored abreast of the Spartiate. The Audacious passed between the Guerrier and the Conquérant, pouring a raking broadside into each, and let go her anchor close on the Conquérant's inner bow. These five ships thus all passed inside; all, as they did so, raked the enemy with terrible effect, and were all clustered about the headmost ships of the French line.

The sixth ship, the Vanguard, with Nelson's flag at the mizen, anchored by the stern, outside and abreast of the Spartiate. The other ships followed, the Minotaur anchoring abreast of the Aquilon, the Defence abreast of the Peuple Souverain. The Bellerophon let go her anchor on the starboard bow of the Orient, but, having too much way on, did not bring up till she had opened the three decker's broadside, and became singly opposed to the fire of that enormous ship before her own broadside completely bore. She thus sustained very great loss, and cutting her cable, drifted along the French line and anchored again some distance to the eastward, where she remained till the next day with her ensign flying on the stump of her main-mast, her captain wounded, and three of her lieutenants killed. The Majestic fared nearly as badly; whether on account of the darkness and smoke, or, as in the other cases, from her anchor not bringing her up, she ran her jib-boom into the main-rigging of the Heureux, and remained in that position for some time, suffering greatly. Her main and mizen masts went by the board; her captain was killed by a musketball through the neck. At length she disentangled herself, and bringing her broadside to bear on the starboard bow of the Mercure, took a severe revenge. The Swiftsure and Alexander, warned off from the dangerous shoal by the fate of the Culloden, came into action a few minutes past eight, and anchored, one on each bow of the Orient. An hour later the Leander, which had waited to offer assistance to the Culloden, anchored

in comparative safety athwart the hawse of the Franklin.

By this time the five headmost ships of the French line were completely subdued. A little before ten, the Orient caught fire on the poop, probably, as was supposed, by the ignition of some carcasses or inflammable composition she had on board. The furious cannonade from the guns of the Swiftsure and Alexander directed towards the spot prevented all attempts to extinguish the flames, and the ship was soon in a blaze; about half-past ten she blew up, the explosion and the fall of the burning wreck causing imminent danger to the English ships near, especially to the Alexander which was on fire in several places. The victory was now assured; and though towards morning the action was partially renewed in the rear, further resistance was but slight. The Guillaume Tell and the Généreux, with the frigates Justice and Diane, fled; the Timoléon, endeavouring to follow them, was driven on shore, where, the next day, her crew set her on fire and escaped to the land.

Never in the annals of modern war had a victory been so complete. Nelson thought that it would have been still more so, that the *Guillaume Tell* and the *Généreux* would also have been taken, had he not been incapacitated by a wound in the head. This was, perhaps, mere fancy, and differs from his official statement to Lord St. Vincent, which ran: "These two ships, with two frigates, I am sorry to say, made their escape, nor was it in my power to prevent them. Captain Hood most handsomely endeavoured to do it, but I had no ship in a condition to support the *Zealous*, and I was obliged to call her in." Berry's narrative, written with

a knowledge of the Admiral's despatch, almost repeats its words; but Captain Miller, writing to his wife independently and privately, said: "The Admiral made the Zealous, Goliath, Audacious, and Leander signals to chase the others; the Zealous very gallantly pushed at them alone, and exchanged broadsides as she passed close on the different tacks; but they had so much the start of the other ships and now of the Zealous, who had suffered much in her rigging, and knowing also they were remarkably fast sailers, the Admiral made the general signal of recall, and these four ships were soon out of sight." It is not easy to see what more could have been done, even if the Admiral had not been wounded. As it was, the wound, though severe and at first considered dangerous, did not by any means disable him. He was struck on the forehead by a piece of langridge, which cut a large flap of skin and flesh; and this, falling over his eye, and with the gush of blood, completely blinded him for the moment. When, however, the blood was stanched and the wound dressed, he was able to come on deck, watch the Orient blow up, and order boats to be sent to pick up her men. Whether he was actually on deck on the morning of the 2nd does not appear; most probably he was, though later in the day he permitted himself to be put to bed.

The principle on which the battle was fought is so clear that further explanation is needless; and we have Berry's distinct assurance that everything went exactly as it had been arranged, and that Nelson's plan was minutely and precisely executed. Unless we suppose Berry to have been guilty of saying the thing that was not, and that he knew was not, this completely disposes of

the attempt which has been made to attribute the design of passing inside the French line to Captain Foley of the Goliath. It is, indeed, quite possible that the anchoring inside or outside was left to the judgment of the captain of the leading ship; but independent of Berry's authoritative statement, we may be very sure that Nelson, in discussing and explaining the various situations, spoke of the probability of the enemy not clearing for action on the offside. After being in Hood's confidence, it is incredible that he did not know that the French had committed this blunder when they met Rodney to leeward of Dominica in April, 1782, and did not calculate on their repeating it,—as, in fact, they did.

From beginning to end the plan of the attack bears marks of Hood's teaching, though Hood himself had never been able to put it in practice. But, tracing the idea a little farther back, it is very probable that Hood's thoughts had first been directed to it by Captain John Elphinston, who, while serving as an admiral in the Russian service, had proposed a similar method for the attack on the Turks at Chesme in 1770, although he too had been prevented from carrying it out. What is of more importance, as marking the genius of the man who now worked out to a successful issue a design which had only been proposed by his very able predecessors, is the fact, which French writers have systematically lost sight of, that throughout the century, and especially during the war of American Independence, French naval commanders had, by their persistent practice, shown their belief that a fleet moored in line of battle, with its extremities protected by batteries on shore, was virtually unassailable. Later French writers have repeatedly accused their admiral, Brueys, of fatuous ineptitude for lying with his fleet in an exposed roadstead, contrary to the directions of Bonaparte, and knowing that a superior English fleet was in the neighbourhood. As to which last, it does not appear that either Brueys or Bonaparte had any knowledge whatever of an English fleet being within the Mediterranean; and even if Brueys had known of it, he might very well be excused for believing that it was not superior; the conduct of the English fleet under Hotham had not been such as to convince the southern Frenchmen of their inferiority.

The point of greater interest is the blame that has been assigned to Brueys for neglecting the General's order to go inside the harbour of Alexandria. It is unnecessary to discuss what would have happened to the French fleet had Nelson found it there. As it was, he wrote that, if he had had some bomb-vessels, "In forty-eight hours after the victory every transport and all the stores in them would have been destroyed at Alexandria; for the port is so very small and so crowded that not one shell or carcass could have fell amiss." That the French fleet, if in the harbour, would have been kept there till bomb-vessels arrived, may be considered certain; and Brueys was quite able to understand that, if Bonaparte was not. French writers, wise after the event, have dwelt on the obvious insecurity of the position in Aboukir Bay: they have lost sight of the fact that D'Estaing, whom they delight to speak of as a man of ebullient courage, did, on two separate occasions, refuse to attack a very inferior English fleet at anchor; and on a third occasion, when he did attack, suffered himself to be ignominiously beaten off. It is said, and

is probably true, that on this occasion, at St. Lucia, Suffren, then captain of the Fantasque, implored him to go in and anchor on the enemy's buoys, when the batteries would be neutralised, and he would be able to crush the squadron by superior force. As he had twelve large ships, of 74 or 80 guns, against seven small ones, of 50 or 64 guns, it is impossible to doubt that Barrington would have been in a very awkward predicament if D'Estaing could have mustered sufficient resolution to follow Suffren's advice. With such odds in his favour, he had nothing to do but go in and win; but this was just what the unwritten law of French tactics absolutely forbade.

For it was not only D'Estaing, of ebullient courage, who manifested this reluctance to attack a fleet anchored in line of battle. In August, 1781, when the combined fleet of thirty-six sail of the line under Cordova and Guichen entered the Channel, they judged it imprudent to attack Darby, who with twenty ships took up a position in Torbay; and in January, 1782, when Hood anchored off the Basse-terre of St. Kitts, entirely unsupported by batteries on shore, De Grasse, stung into attacking him, did so in the same desultory manner and with as little success as D'Estaing at St. Lucia. It is unnecessary to mention further instances of the French practice; but it was of perhaps equal importance that, on two occasions, Hood had an apparent opportunity of attacking a French fleet at anchor and had not availed himself of it, although on one of them, in Golfe Jouan, he had had an overwhelming superiority of force. We know now that both at St. Kitts and in Golfe Jouan Hood had intended to attack, and was only prevented

119

from doing so by accidental circumstances; but the French did not know it, and may be excused for believing that he considered it imprudent even to attempt it.

The French based their belief on the experience of more than a hundred years, and Nelson had not then shown them that it was altogether fallacious. In this respect modern critics have the advantage over Admiral Brueys, as appears indeed, among many other indications, from his firm idea that if any attack was made, it would be on the rear, that is, on the end out of range of the guns and mortars on Aboukir Island. But he did not survive to give his explanations; he was cut in two by a round-shot some time before the Orient blew up, and has ever since been the mark of false accusations and false criticism. He was not a man of brilliant genius, but seems to have been a good and brave officer. So also was his chief of the staff, Casabianca, who, with his young son, perished in the explosion, not exactly in the way described in Mrs. Hemans's popular little poem.

On August 2nd, so soon as the action was finished by the flight of the Guillaume Tell and Généreux and the running ashore of the Timoléon, Nelson issued the general order: "Almighty God having blessed His Majesty's arms with victory, the Admiral intends returning public thanksgiving for the same at two o'clock this day, and he recommends every ship doing the same as soon as convenient." This he signed himself, as also a letter of thanks and congratulations to the captains, officers, seamen, and marines of the squadron, an acting-order to the first-lieutenant of the Majestic to command her in the room of Captain Westcott, and an order to Berry to go on board the Leander with the despatches to Lord St.

Vincent. Wounded as he was, he still gave his attention to the many details of the service which Berry might very well have done for him, or which might have waited. The despatch to St. Vincent, for instance, was dated on the 3rd, and the Leander did not sail till the 6th; so that there was no pressing necessity for the order to Berry on the 2nd. But it is probable that the fever induced by the wound caused an abnormal excitement of the brain, which it was considered safer to humour than to check altogether. If the man would not rest, he might busy himself about trifles. On the 3rd he was able to write a holograph letter to Sir James Saumarez and the several captains of the fleet, thanking them for the sword they offered him, and promising, in accordance with their request, to have his portrait painted on the first opportunity, "to be hung up in the room belonging to the Egyptian Club, now established in commemoration of that glorious day," August 1st. It seems doubtful whether the establishment of the Club went any farther than the subscription for the sword; and though many portraits of Nelson were painted both at Naples and in England, there is no record of any one having been appropriated in the promised manner.

The Leander, which, with Berry and the despatches for the Commander-in-Chief on board, sailed for the fleet on August 6th, fell in with the Généreux on the coast of Candia on the 18th, and after an obstinate defence, in which Berry was severely wounded, was captured. She was taken to Corfu, whence her officers and men, after being very rudely treated and robbed even of their clothes, were sent on to Trieste and released on their parole. It was the beginning of December

before Berry arrived in England. But meanwhile Nelson had sent Captain Capel (the Hon. Thomas Bladen Capel, just promoted to the command of the *Mutine*) to Naples, to carry a copy of his despatch overland to the Admiralty.

The Mutine reached Naples on September 1st, when the news threw the Neapolitans into the wildest excitement. Their Government had been very anxious lest the French expedition, evading or defeating the English fleet, should return to wreak on them its vengeance for the broken treaty and the alliance with Austria. Now that the French fleet was destroyed and the French army shut up in Egypt, they felt safe; and still more, they felt the delight of knowing that those who had terrified them were themselves crushed and humbled. Everybody, from the Queen to the poorest beggar, was, or pretended to be, in a frenzy of joy; and the most frenzied among them was Lady Hamilton, the wife of the English ambassador, whom circumstances had associated in a very intimate manner with the fortunes of the Queen, and who now drove about Naples in an open carriage, with a bandeau on her head bearing the legend, Nelson and Victory. But all the English in Naples were wildly enthusiastic; and Sir William Hamilton, meeting the Cardinal of York in the street, stopped his carriage to tell him the news. The Prince, to whom Sir William was unknown, seemed at first to resent the liberty; but on hearing what he had to say, answered that he never could forget that he was English, and that he shared in the joy which all Englishmen must feel at so glorious a victory.

When Capel brought the news to London on October

2nd, the enthusiasm, though not so wild, nor so theatrical, was perhaps more real. The very next day, October 3rd, the City of London voted two hundred guineas for a sword of honour for Nelson, and to Berry the freedom of the City in a gold box of the value of one hundred guineas. On the 6th Nelson was gazetted a peer by the title of Baron Nelson of the Nile and Burnham Thorpe. On Sunday the 21st and on the two following Sundays, a special thanksgiving prayer for the victory was read in all the churches, including, of course, those of Burnham Thorpe and Hilborough. Parliament met on November 20th, when the King's speech specially referred to the "great and brilliant victory" as "a blow to the power and influence of France, affording an opening which, if improved by suitable exertions on the part of other Powers, may lead to the general deliverance of Europe." On the 21st the two Houses of Parliament unanimously passed votes of thanks to Nelson, to the captains and officers, and to the seamen and marines of the fleet; on the 22nd the House of Commons addressed the King, praying him to give directions for a monument in St. Paul's to the memory of Captain Westcott; and on the 23rd, voted a pension of £2000 per annum to Nelson and the two next heirs to the title. A gold medal was ordered for Nelson and all the captains of ships of the line. The Emperor of Russia sent the victorious Admiral a gold box set with diamonds; the Sultan of Turkey sent a diamond aigrette, or "Plume of Triumph," taken from one of the imperial turbans; the Sultan's mother sent a box set with diamonds valued at £1000. From the King of Naples he received a sword of honour; from the King of Sardinia

a box set with diamonds; from the East India Company £10,000; from the Turkey Company a piece of plate; and £500 for a piece of plate from the Patriotic Fund; besides the freedom of very many corporations.

From his many friends and acquaintances,—the Duke of Clarence, Lord Hood, Captain Locker, Lady Parker, among others-Nelson received letters of warm congratulation; and one from Lord Howe, to whom he was personally unknown, but who trusted he would "forgive the additional trouble of my compliments on this singular occasion, not less memorable for the skill than cool judgment testified under the considerable disadvantages in the superior force and situation of the enemy." acknowledging this letter in the following January, Nelson expressed the high value which he placed on the "approbation of the great, the immortal Earl Howe-an honour the most flattering a sea-officer could receive, as it comes from the first and greatest sea-officer the world has ever produced." Nelson's reply is, however, most notable for its brief exposition of the plan on which the battle was fought, an exposition sufficient in itself to demolish the popular theory that the chief characteristic of his genius was his courage; that he won victories by the directness and impetuosity of his attack; that his one idea of tactics was "go at 'em"; and that fortune favoured the brave.

The more closely Nelson's actions and letters are studied, the more clearly will it be seen that the point on which his thoughts continually dwelt was not the mere "going at 'em," but the most advantageous way to "go at 'em"; and that, in every instance, the dash and impetuosity which caught the popular fancy were guided

by genius, and controlled by prudence and foresight. On this occasion he wrote: "By attacking the enemy's van and centre, the wind blowing directly along their line, I was enabled to throw what force I pleased on a few ships. This plan my friends readily conceived by the signals, and we always kept a superior force to the enemy. . . . I have never before detailed the action to any one, but I should have thought it wrong to have kept it from one who is our great master in naval tactics and bravery."

After refitting such of the prizes as were at all seaworthy, they were sent to Gibraltar with the greater part of the squadron under the command of Sir James Saumarez. The other prizes were burned; the Culloden and Alexander were sent to Naples to refit, and Nelson in the Vanguard followed them, leaving Hood in the Zealous to keep up the blockade of Alexandria.

## CHAPTER VII

## NAPLES AND PALERMO

THE arrival of the *Vanguard* in Naples Bay on September 22nd was the signal for a fresh outburst of public joy, Lady Hamilton again making herself conspicuous by her impassioned demonstration. As the ship anchored, she, accompanied by her husband, was the first to go on board, and exclaiming, "O God, is it possible!" fell fainting on Nelson's arm. A burst of tears relieved her, and she was quite recovered before the King came on board and, taking Nelson by the hand, hailed him as his "Deliverer and Preserver."

This was practically the beginning of Nelson's acquaintance with Lady Hamilton; for though he had met her during his short visit to Naples five years before, and though in his occasional letters to her husband he had generally added some courteous message for her, it was now for the first time that he was thrown into her society in circumstances which at once established an intimacy destined to have a marked influence on Nelson's fortunes.

Though now the wife of the English ambassador, received in the best Neapolitan Society and the confidente of the Queen, Lady Hamilton was a woman of very

humble origin and disreputable antecedents. Amy Lyon, the daughter of a village blacksmith in Cheshire, was born probably in 1761, and when about seventeen came up to London as a domestic servant, a respectable position which she did not long retain. She was of remarkable beauty and giddy disposition, and threw herself into the whirl of pleasure and dissipation. After several liaisons of longer or shorter duration, she became the mistress of the Hon. Charles Greville, with whom she remained for about four years leading a life of comparative respectability. During this time she made the acquaintance of Romney, who seems to have considered it his chief happiness to paint her portrait. She was painted also by Reynolds, Hoppner, and Lawrence, so that altogether pictures of her in the full flush of her beauty are very common. In 1786 Greville's affairs fell into confusion, and he seems to have had no scruple about proposing to his uncle, Sir William Hamilton, to take the girl off his hands. This Hamilton readily agreed to do; and accordingly Amy Lyon, or, as at this time she preferred to call herself, Emily Harte, was sent to Naples, where she presently became Hamilton's mistress, and five years later Hamilton's wife.

While she lived with Greville, as afterwards with Hamilton, every attention was paid to improving her education. She sang well; she spoke Italian fluently, and without the vulgar accent which she never got rid of in speaking English. Her singing, her dancing, her attitudes after the antique, her readiness in conversation and in repartee, made her welcome everywhere, and the Neapolitans did not trouble to inquire too

closely into the truth of her hints of a secret marriage. Afterwards, as Hamilton's wife, she was the recognised leader of the English society. She was lively, clever, unaffected, good-humoured, and withal exceedingly beautiful, although as years crept on her figure lost its delicate proportions. As early as 1796 Sir Gilbert Elliot described her as "monstrous," and ten years later the caricatures represented her as of enormous bulk.

When the atrocities of the French Revolution and the death of Marie-Antoinette rendered the Queen of Naples bitterly hostile to France, she found in Lady Hamilton a convenient medium for secret correspondence with the English ambassador and the English Government; and as Emma, the name she finally determined on, was unquestionably a clever, capable woman, she was trusted with many delicate and confidential matters both by her husband and the Queen. She thus began to consider herself a very important person, and in after years came to believe that she had been the prime motor of the Neapolitan policy at this time. She did not, perhaps, tell lies consciously and intentionally, but her delusion became so complete that she did lie with a very remarkable persistence and thoroughness. Of her many statements as to public affairs there is not one that is not absolutely and entirely untrue. It is, however, only lately that this has been established beyond question; so that for nearly a century she has been represented as a woman who rendered very valuable service to the State at a most critical and difficult period, and who, notwithstanding her faults, was cruelly and shamefully neglected by the government when no longer able to be of use to it.

On Nelson's arrival at Naples, Lady Hamilton virtually took possession of him. Her egregious vanity was flattered by his open dependence on her, and her real good-humour was gratified by ministering to his comforts. The wound on his forehead was healed, but the effects of the blow still remained. He was subject to violent headaches and nervous irritability. The intense strain, too, of the weeks immediately preceding August 1st had told on his constitution, already weakened by the suffering of the previous year. It was a case in which the nurse was of more use than the physician, and Lady Hamilton devoted herself to the task. His wife was absent. She was a good, conscientious woman; too good, too conscientious, perhaps, to minister to her husband's weaknesses had she been present. She had nursed him during his former illness, in dreary lodgings in Bath or London, and he can scarcely have helped comparing or contrasting the calm, sedate, perhaps frigid excellence of Lady Nelson with the vivacity, enthusiasm, and glowing charms of Lady Hamilton. The difference of the surroundings, too, was very great. Nelson's income had always been limited; he had seen little or nothing of the grandeur and display of the wealthy. His acquaintance with society scarcely went beyond the official. No life could be plainer or more frugal than that which he had led at Burnham Thorpe before he commissioned the Agamemnon. Now everything was magnificence, splendour, and profusion; the King, the Queen, the nobles of the Court, Hamilton and all the English in Naples vying with each other to do him honour. Festivities, banquets, balls, illuminations dazzled and enchanted him; and everywhere the central figure

appeared to be his lovely and affectionate nurse, of whose past history he knew little, and whom he saw on terms of friendly intimacy with the Queen and the Court. The rest is a story as old as the myths of Hercules or Achilles, of all ages and of all climes.

But Nelson, in becoming the slave of a beautiful and voluptuous woman, did not cease to be a great commander. There is a common idea that his passions detained him at Naples to the neglect of his duty. This is erroneous. He made Naples his headquarters because he was ordered to do so, to provide for the safety of the kingdom and to take measures for the reduction of Malta. He captured Leghorn: he stationed such ships as were at his disposal round Malta, under the immediate command of Captain Ball of the Alexander, whose force was strengthened by the arrival of a small Portuguese squadron under the Marquis de Niza; and when the Neapolitan army was ignominiously routed by the French, who advanced on the capital, he received the King, with his family and retinue, on board the Vanguard and the other ships with him at the time, and conveyed him to Palermo.

The evacuation of Naples was a matter of some delicacy and difficulty, for the *lazzaroni* were strongly attached to the King, and broke out into violent and sanguinary tumult when they suspected that he intended to leave them. The greatest secrecy was therefore necessary in making the arrangements which were planned by the Queen in concert with Nelson, Lady Hamilton acting as the intermediary and confidential agent. Many years afterwards it pleased Lady Hamilton to fancy and assert that she was the moving spirit in the

whole business, that she taught the Queen the necessity of leaving Naples, won her consent, designed the plan and settled the execution of it, that the King, the Queen, her husband, and Nelson were but instruments in her hands. All which, with many imaginative details, is absolutely untrue. What Nelson wrote at the time, and assuredly without any wish to depreciate Lady Hamilton's share in the work, was that, as it would have been highly imprudent for either Hamilton or himself to have gone to Court, the correspondence was carried on with the greatest address by Lady Hamilton and the Queen, who, being in the habit of interchanging notes, could continue to do so without exciting suspicion.

For the next few months Nelson remained at Palermo. The French swept over Italy and occupied Naples, where the Jacobins received them enthusiastically and the people at large made no opposition. The squadron was dispersed; part of it was off Alexandria, part was blockading Malta, part was protecting Sicily; it was not till the end of March, 1799, that a sufficient force for the blockade of Naples could be got together, and that Troubridge was ordered to undertake the duty. It was probably about this time that Nelson was formally appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Neapolitan navy. The commission itself cannot now be found, but it appears to be referred to in a letter to Captain Troubridge of March 30th. "I herewith enclose you," Nelson wrote, "the final instructions of his Sicilian Majesty, and request you will have them copied and the originals returned to me: and as far as lies in your power, to carry them into execution, always bearing in mind that speedy rewards and quick punishments are the foundation of good government."

At once and without difficulty Troubridge took possession of the several islands on the coast. "The people," he wrote, "are perfectly mad with joy, and are asking for their beloved monarch. If the nobility were men of principle and respectability, how easy it would be to get the Neapolitan soldiers and militia to declare for their King! . . . I beg your Lordship will particularly recommend Captain Chianchi; he is a fine, hardy seaman, a good and loyal subject, desirous of doing everything for the welfare of his country. . . . I have a villain, by name Francesco, on board, who commanded the castle at Ischia, formerly a Neapolitan officer and of property in that island. The moment we took possession of the castle, the mob tore this vagabond's coat, with the tricoloured cape and cap of liberty button, to pieces, and he had then the impudence to put on his Sicilian Majesty's regimentals again; upon which I tore his epaulette off, took his cockade out, and obliged him to throw them overboard. I then honoured him with double irons. . . . I pray your Lordship to send an honest judge here to try these miscreants on the spot, that some proper examples may be made. . . . The villains increase so fast on my bands, and the people are calling for justice; eight or ten of them must be hung."

By the end of April, Salerno, Sorrento, Castellamare, were recovered for the King, and the French, leaving five hundred men to garrison St. Elmo, withdrew to Capua and Caserta. Everywhere the mob was noisily demonstrative in favour of the King, and the great bulk of

the people was ready to accept whatever party was in power. Cowardice rather than disaffection seemed the leading factor of the revolution; but there were many who, from political or selfish motives, had taken an active part in inviting and receiving the French, and others, officers in the King's service, who had betrayed or sold their posts. For such, when they fell into his hands, Troubridge had little pity, and handed them over to the civil power as a matter of course. In one case special orders were given by the King for a courtmartial, and Acton, writing of this to Nelson, added: "The King begs and hopes that Captain Troubridge will direct some of his officers to attend to it with the officers of his service, and order accordingly what shall be thought proper at the conclusion of it." Troubridge thought it would be better to leave the court-martial to the Neapolitan officers, but, anticipating a capital sentence, wrote: "If that should be the case, shall I confirm it? My hand will not shake signing my name. Without some examples, nothing can go well."

It was just at this time, when the reduction of Naples seemed certain, that Nelson received information of the French fleet having escaped from Brest, having probably effected a junction with the Spanish fleet at Cadiz and come into the Mediterranean. He was led to suppose that the combined force might amount to forty-seven sail of the line, and that their first object would be the recovery of Minorca. He at once called in the greater part of his outlying ships from Naples or along the coast and from Malta, with orders to join Rear-Admiral Duckworth off Port Mahon; but a few days later, conceiving that Sicily was more likely to be their

aim, he sent them still more pressing orders to meet him at Marittimo, where he hoped to be joined by Duckworth and, what with Russians, Turks, and Portuguese, to make up a fleet equal in number to the enemy's. He would seem to have learned that the Spaniards had not joined the French.

On quitting Naples, Troubridge left Captain Foote of the Seahorse frigate as senior officer to carry on the blockade as closely as possible with the very small squadron at his disposal, and with general instructions to co-operate with Cardinal Ruffo, the commander of the royal forces on shore. Nelson was joined by Troubridge at Palermo on May 17th, but bad weather prevented him sailing till the 20th. On the 23rd he was on the rendezvous off Marittimo; and having there heard from Lord St. Vincent the actual state of things, he determined to return to Palermo, fill up with provisions, and "hold the squadron in momentary readiness to act as the Commander-in-Chief might order, or the circumstances might require." But he was nervously alive to the possible danger of Sicily if the squadron were to leave it; so long as the squadron was there in strength, he was convinced that the French would make no attack. What Bruix might have done had leisure been allowed him, it is impossible to say, but the closeness with which he was followed up effectually deranged any plans he had formed; and eventually he was glad to get out of the Mediterranean and back to Brest without being overtaken by Lord Keith, who at this very critical juncture succeeded St. Vincent as Commanderin-Chief.

On June 13th Nelson had just sailed for Naples, with

troops and stores on board, when he was met by two 74-gun ships detached by Keith with a letter to warn him of the probability of Bruix coming his way. He immediately returned to Palermo, disembarked the troops, and proceeded to his former rendezvous off Marittimo, where he hoped to be joined by the ships from Malta. He would then have eighteen sail of the line, not a three-decker among them, one of them a 64, and three Portuguese, whereas the French had four first-rates and eighteen or more two-deckers. "I shall wait off Marittimo," he wrote, "anxiously expecting such a reinforcement as may enable me to go in search of the enemy's fleet, when not one moment shall be lost in bringing them to battle; for I consider the best defence for His Sicilian Majesty's dominions is to place myself alongside the French."

A few days later his intelligence led him to suppose that the French might be going to Naples. It was understood that the forts were on the point of surrendering, and that the arrival of the French fleet might leave the whole work to be done over again. On June 21st he touched at Palermo, had an interview with the King, and at once sailed again for Naples, taking with him Sir William Hamilton and his wife, whose knowledge of Italian might be of the greatest use in confidential communication with Ruffo.

On the way he received intelligence of an armistice between the King's forces and the rebels. He denounced it as infamous. To him, as to Troubridge, the rebels were mutineers and ought to be suppressed; the idea of making terms with them was bitterness to him. He was sure that the arrival of the French fleet would put

an end to the armistice; he determined that the arrival of the English fleet should equally do so, and as he entered Naples Bay on the afternoon of the 24th, signalled the Seahorse to haul down the flag of truce. On anchoring, however, he learned that the armistice had ended the day before in a capitulation, by the terms of which the rebels were to be sent to France in vessels provided by the King. Now it is perfectly well established as the usage of civilised war that terms granted by a military officer are conditional on the approval of his superiors, unless he has distinct authority to negotiate, or the capitulation has been effected wholly or in part. In the present instance Cardinal Ruffo had not only no authority to negotiate, but he had express orders from the King not to do so. Nelson therefore called the negotiation and the treaty infamous; and finding that no steps had yet been taken to carry it into effect, that, in fact, the rebels in the forts were in exactly the same situation as they were before the negotiation was commenced, he had no hesitation in declaring that the treaty was invalid, and that he would not permit the rebels to embark or quit the forts. With this resolution he formally acquainted them on the 25th. "They must," he wrote, "surrender themselves to His Majesty's royal mercy." A copy of this declaration was sent to the Cardinal, who came on board the Foudroyant to see Nelson about it. A long and stormy conversation followed, the Hamiltons acting as interpreters; and at last Nelson wrote that on his arrival he "found a treaty entered into with the rebels which, in my opinion, cannot be carried into execution without the approbation of His Sicilian Majesty." This he gave to the Cardinal as closing the interview. There can be no doubt that the tenor of this paper was communicated to the garrisons; but even if it was not, the formal declaration sent to them on the 25th was sufficient; and it was with a full knowledge that the treaty was annulled that the forts surrendered to the King's mercy on the evening of the 26th.

With what happened to the prisoners after they were handed over to the civil power Nelson had nothing whatever to do. He knew nothing about them except that they were rebels taken in arms against their sovereign; and with such he had no sympathy. He refused to interfere; he left them to the justice of their country. It may very well be that that justice was not tempered with mercy. The Royalists had been too thoroughly frightened to be in a merciful humour; and assuredly the Jacobins, whether of Italy or France, had not set them an example of clemency. If they had received the same measure as they meted out to others, they would have had small reason for complaint; but in truth the executions, about seventy, with which the Neapolitan Royalists took vengeance for their terror and losses, fade into insignificance when compared with Jacobin enormities.

With one execution only was Nelson in any way concerned. There was a certain Francisco Caracciolo, a man of good family, in the prime of life, a commodore in the Neapolitan navy, who four years before had commanded the *Tancredi* in the fleet under Hotham, and was well esteemed both by his King and the English officers of his acquaintance. This man had accompanied the King and Court to Palermo; but when the Partheno.

peian Republic proclaimed the estates of all absentees to be forfeited, he obtained leave to go to Naples to arrange his affairs. The arrangement took the form of his entering the service of the Republic, of accepting the post of Admiral of the Republican flotilla, and of commanding the Republican gunboats against a squadron of the Royal frigates. He had afterwards thrown himself into one of the Neapolitan sea-forts; but when these were on the point of capitulating, fearing that he, as a traitor of the deepest dye, might be exempted, he made his escape in disguise into the country, where he was apprehended by some peasants, who brought him on board the Foudroyant in the early morning of June 29th.

Nelson immediately ordered Count Thurn, captain of the Neapolitan frigate Minerva, to assemble a court of officers of his own service, and try him on a charge of "rebellion against his lawful sovereign, and for firing at his colours hoisted on board his frigate, the Minerva." The court was summoned forthwith, and assembled at nine o'clock the same morning on board the Foudroyant. No objection was made on behalf of the prisoner to the constitution of the court or to the authority under which it was convened. His only attempt at defence was an assertion that he was acting under compulsion; but the evidence of his being a free agent, and having had repeated opportunities of escaping had he wished, was deemed conclusive. He was found guilty, and sentenced to death. It was then about noon. On receiving the report, Nelson gave Thurn a detailed order to carry the sentence into execution without delay; and accordingly Caracciolo was hanged that same evening at the fore vard-arm of the Minerva.

The prompt trial, sentence, and execution of this notorious traitor filled the Italian Jacobins with mingled rage and terror. They sputtered venom and lies, which found their way into print, and were introduced into literature by Southey, whose story was long supposed, and is by many still supposed, to be a faithful narrative of facts. The garrisons, it is said, were taken out of the castles under pretence of carrying the treaty into effect, and were basely delivered over to the vengeance of the Sicilian court. Caracciolo, described as a man of seventy, was, we are told, informally and hurriedly tried by a packed and prejudiced court, summoned without legal authority; and all because the British Admiral was a mere tool in the hands of a foul strumpet bound by interest to a bloodthirsty queen. All of this is absolutely untrue. What actually occurred has been related. Caracciolo was a man of forty-seven, though haggard and worn by misery, privation, and the sense of guilt. With the morality of Lady Hamilton we are not here concerned. With all her faults she was a kindly, soft-hearted woman; but even if she had been the cruel, bloody-minded monster she has been represented, it is sufficiently well attested that she neither spoke to nor saw Nelson between the time of Caracciolo's being brought on board and of his execution. That in cases of mutiny Nelson considered clemency misplaced, and prompt execution advisable, has already been shown; and rebellion such as Caracciolo's was to him the worst form of mutiny. In hanging him the same evening he was strictly following the precedent of St. Vincent's determination off Cadiz only a couple of years before; and to those who carefully consider the circumstances at Naples, and the pain which this rigid execution of his duty must have given a man of kindly nature, Nelson's conduct at this period, far from being judged blamable, disgraceful, "a stain upon his memory," will appear rather most honourable and meritorious.

Notwithstanding the surrender of the Neapolitan seaforts the castles Uovo and Nuovo, St. Elmo, which was garrisoned by the French, still held out. Troubridge was ordered to take command of the mixed force on shore,—seamen and marines, Austrians, Russians, Turks, and Neapolitans—and reduce the place without delay. On July 13th Nelson was able to announce its capture, making, at the same time, a particular request that Troubridge's services might be rewarded; consequent on which Troubridge was created a baronet on November 30th.

Nelson's letter had gone but a few hours, when he received an order from Keith to send as many ships to Minorca as he could possibly spare. In a letter to Lord Spencer, just despatched, he had speculated on the probability of his being called on to detach ships for the protection of Minorca. "Should such an order," he wrote, "come at this moment, it would be a cause for some consideration whether Minorca is to be risked, or the two kingdoms of Naples and Sicily. I rather think my decision would be to risk the former." And so it was when the order had actually come. He replied to Keith, in formal language, that the safety of Sicily and Naples required him to stay where he was, and equally prevented him detaching any of his force. To Lord Spencer he wrote more fully and more positively. "I will not part with a single ship," he said. "I am fully

aware of the act I have committed; but, sensible of my loyal intentions, I am prepared for any fate which may await my disobedience."

On July 19th he received another and more emphatic order from Keith, dated July 9th; he was to come to Minorca at once with the whole of his force, or if he deemed it absolutely necessary that some part and he himself should remain, he was to detach the greater part under the next senior officer. Nelson again replied, in so many words, that till the French scoundrels should be driven out of the kingdom, "I think it right not to obey your Lordship's order. . . . I have no scruple in deciding that it is better to save the kingdom of Naples and risk Minorca." It was not till July 22nd, when he received a third and still more stringent order to the same effect, that he deemed it expedient to obey, to the extent, at least, of detaching Duckworth with four 74gun ships; and as Keith left the Mediterranean on the 29th, he heard nothing more about it at the time, though he affected to consider himself ill-treated when, two months later, he received a gentle censure from the Admiralty, accompanied with an order to act as Commander-in-Chief during Keith's absence.

It would thus appear that the Admiralty were willing to allow him a very wide discretion; but the incident has nevertheless a very grave importance, as occurring in the career of a man of such eminence, of one who so constantly laid down the rule that the first duty of an officer is obedience. It does not lessen the crime,—and from the military point of view it was a crime—to say that, after all, Keith was wrong in anticipating an attack on Minorca, and Nelson was probably not wrong in fore-

casting a fresh outbreak if the English squadron was withdrawn from Naples. Of the intentions of Bruix Nelson knew nothing: he believed that Keith was probably right, and that an attack on Minorca was pending; but he was of opinion that Naples was of greater importance than Minorca, and he deliberately preferred acting on his own opinion to obeying the orders of the Commander-in-Chief.

It has been frequently alleged that this extraordinary act of disobedience was prompted by Lady Hamilton in the interests of the Queen. There is no evidence that Lady Hamilton had, directly, anything to do with it; but it is extremely probable, perhaps almost certain, that the anxiety which, during all this year, Nelson felt for the safety of the Two Sicilies was largely due to the influence of his adored mistress; that he was unwilling to leave her, unwilling to expose her and her friends to danger, and, not impossibly, convinced by her of the vast importance of the kingdom to the allied cause. It must be remembered that his health was, throughout, far from robust; that he was frequently ill, spending days, apparently, on the couch, feverish, uneasy, hypochondriacal; that the blow on the head a year before had left him peevish, suspicious, irritable, opinionated. But in addition to this, it must also be remembered that this, though the most flagrant, was by no means the first instance in which Nelson deliberately preferred his own opinion or judgment to that of his commanding officer. His disobedience at Naples in 1799 differed from that at St. Kitts in 1785, or at Antigua in 1786, only in degree; and his conduct in the battle of St. Vincent might have been severely judged had any untoward

accident marred its effect. He decided rightly at Naples, as he did at St. Vincent, at Antigua, at St. Kitts, though the disobedience was more marked, the advantage more doubtful; but it would be fatal to the Navy and the country if it was once admitted that the opinion of a subordinate officer could be lightly put in comparison with the orders of the Commander-in-Chief.

Nelson's period of chief command was short and uneventful. The enemy had no naval force within the limits of the station, and the fleet was free to operate on the coast of Italy, reduce Capua and Gaeta, provide for the safety of Naples and Minorca, and keep up a strict blockade of Malta and Egypt. On August 1st the King dined on board the Foudroyant, and as he drank the victorious Admiral's health, all the Neapolitan ships and forts fired a royal salute of twenty-one guns. Nelson, describing the scene in a letter to his wife, wrote: "In the evening there was a general illumination. Amongst other representations, a large vessel was fitted out like a Roman galley; on its oars were fixed lamps, and in the centre was erected a rostral column with my name; at the stern were elevated two angels supporting my picture. The beauty of the whole is beyond my powers of description. More than 2000 variegated lamps were suspended round the vessel. An orchestra was fitted up, and filled with the very best musicians and singers. The piece of music was in a great measure to celebrate my praise, describing their previous distress, 'but Nelson came, the invincible Nelson, and they were preserved and again made happy.' This must not make you think me vain. No, very far from it; I relate it more from gratitude than vanity."

On August 5th, Nelson left Naples in the Foudroyant, carrying with him the King, who, within a few days after his return to Palermo, created him Duke of Bronte, and conferred on him the estate annexed to the title. This, Nelson understood, was worth about £3000 a year, but it does not appear that he ever received that much from it. The letter officially informing him of the grant was dated August 13th, and in replying to this on the same day he first used the signature "Bronte Nelson," which, after receiving his own sovereign's sanction, he changed to "Nelson and Bronte."

In December Keith returned to the Mediterranean, writing to Nelson from off Oporto to put himself under his orders. On arriving on the station, Keith went, in the first instance, to Mahon, where he had news of a French squadron fitting out for the relief of Malta. At Leghorn he was met by Nelson with the further news of the Russians having withdrawn their ships from the blockade. He resolved, therefore, to occupy the station which these had quitted, so as the better to intercept the French squadron if it should really come, which he thought scarcely probable. Between Nelson and himself there seems to have been a difference of opinion as to placing the several ships; and with a determination and carelessness of responsibility peculiar to him, Nelson, who was ordered to look out to the south-east, found himself, on the morning of February 18th, far to the north-west, and there, near the western extremity of Sicily, he fell in with the relieving force. It consisted of the Généreux (which had escaped from the Nile and had afterwards captured the little Leander) with three corvettes and a large store-ship. The corvettes scattered and made good

their escape: the store-ship was taken possession of; and the Généreux, by the gallant action of Captain Peard in the Success frigate, was stayed till the line-of-battle ships came up, when she struck her colours. Admiral Du Perrée, who commanded the squadron, was mortally wounded by a shot from the Success, and died on the following day. Keith naturally wrote that, "Lord Nelson has on this occasion, as on all others, conducted himself with skill and great address in comprehending my signals"; but Nelson more accurately wrote to his brother: "I have written to Lord Spencer, and sent him my journal to prove that the Généreux was taken by me and owing to my plan; that my quitting Lord Keith was at my own risk, and for which, if I had not succeeded, I might have been broke."

On the 24th, Keith, who was anxious to get to Genoa (which, in co-operation with the Austrians, he afterwards reduced), directed Nelson to take command of the blockade of Malta. Nelson's reply in both a public and a private letter was to the effect that his health would not permit him to undertake the service, and that he should be obliged to go to his friends at Palermo. This has, of course, been attributed to his passion for Lady Hamilton, which would not permit him to be absent from her. There was, however, another reason which worked strongly in the same direction. He was excessively disgusted at having been superseded from the chief command, more especially by an officer newly appointed to the station; and appears to have made up his mind from the first that he would not remain under Keith. It is not improbable that this feeling had at least something to do with his extraordinary refusal to

obey Keith's orders in the previous summer; it is certain that it was agitating his mind at this time. It appears in all his letters; in none perhaps more distinctly than in one to Lord Minto of February 26th. "I have serious thoughts," he wrote, "of giving up active service. Greenwich Hospital seems a fit retreat for me after being evidently thought unfit to command in the Mediterranean."

At any rate he was resolved not to stay off Malta; and though Troubridge and other friends wrote strongly, imploring him not to quit the command, he could not be prevailed on to continue. On March 10th he resigned it to Troubridge, he himself returning to Palermo, where he arrived on the 16th. He was, or perhaps rather fancied himself, extremely ill. On March 20th he wrote to Troubridge: "As yet it is too soon to form an opinion whether I ever can be cured of my complaint. . . . At present I see but glimmering hopes, and probably my career of service is at an end, unless the French fleet shall come into the Mediterranean, when nothing shall prevent my dying at my post. . . . We of the Nile are not equal to Lord Keith in his estimation, and ought to think it an honour to serve under such a clever man."

On the 24th, the Foudroyant, under the command of Berry, was sent back to rejoin Troubridge, and had only just come on the station when, on the night of the 29th, the Guillaume Tell, blockaded in Valetta, made a gallant attempt to escape. As she ran out of the harbour she passed close by the Penelope frigate, commanded by Captain Blackwood, who at all hazards followed her, keeping up a continual fire to attract other ships. Blackwood soon found that the Penelope was sailing faster than the huge Frenchman, and remaining under

her stern, yawing now to port, now to starboard, poured in an incessant raking fire, to which the Guillaume Tell, not venturing to round to and demolish her puny antagonist by a broadside, could make no effective reply. Towards morning she had lost her main and mizen topmasts, and the 64-gun ship Lion, coming up, ranged alongside and engaged her yard-arm to yard-arm, but was quickly forced to drop astern. At six o'clock the Foudroyant came up, and after a most gallant defence, the Guillaume Tell, being totally dismasted, struck her colours. She was crowded with men and had suffered very great loss.

The news gave Nelson the most lively satisfaction. She was the last of the Nile ships, and that she should be captured by Berry commanding his flagship seemed a fitting termination to his labours. On April 6th, he wrote to Lord Minto. "Our dear, great Earl of St. Vincent's orders to me were to follow the French Mediterranean fleet and to annihilate them. It has been done, thanks to the zeal and bravery of my gallant friends. My task is done, my health lost, and I have wrote to Lord Keith for my retreat. May all orders be as punctually obeyed, but never again an officer at the close of what I must-without being thought vaincall a glorious career, be so treated. I go with our dear friends Sir William and Lady Hamilton; but whether by water or land depends on the will of Lord Keith." All this and much more to the same effect seems to prove that disgust at Lord Keith's appointment had quite as much to do with his determination to go home as his unwillingness to be separated from his mistress.

It was impossible for the Admiralty to tolerate this

thinly-veiled conduct, even in the victor of the Nile. Any officer with less claim on the national gratitude would have been summarily superseded. Lord Spencer felt that Nelson deserved a certain allowance, and with a delicate tact, at which even Nelson's sensitive nature could not be offended, pointed out to him the disadvantage of the line he had taken. He could not, of course, enter on the question of Keith's appointment as Commander-in-Chief, although he certainly knew the force of that difficulty; he dwelt rather on the impropriety and inconvenience of his continued residence at Palermo. In answer to Nelson's letter of March 20th, he wrote: "I must express my extreme regret that your health should be such as to oblige you to quit your station off Malta at a time when I should suppose there must be the finest prospect of its reduction. . . . If the enemy should come into the Mediterranean . . . I should be much concerned to hear that you learnt of their arrival in that sea, either on shore or in a transport at Palermo." On May 9th, the Admiralty sent out to Keith a formal permission for Nelson to return to England, if his health rendered him incapable of doing his duty, and Lord Spencer again wrote privately: "It is by no means my wish or intention to call you away from service; but having observed that you have been under the necessity of quitting your station off Malta on account of the state of your health . . . it appeared to me much more advisable for you to come home at once than to be obliged to remain inactive at Palermo while active service was going on in other parts of the station. . . . I am quite clear, and I believe I am joined in opinion by all your friends here, that you will be more likely to recover

your health and strength in England than in an inactive situation at a foreign court, however pleasing the respect and gratitude shown to you for your services may be. . . . I trust that you will take in good part what I have taken the liberty to write to you as a friend."

It is unnecessary here to follow into the details of this miserable scandal. It was perhaps better for the service that it should be considered as altogether arising out of feminine influence; and letters from old friends in England as well as from Troubridge, a friend of his boyhood, leave no doubt that the woman was generally believed to be the cause of the evil. There can be no question that she had a great deal to do with it,—a very great deal; but the irritable jealousy not altogether alien to Nelson's nature at the best of times, and at this period aggravated by ill-health and the severe blow on the head, must bear a large share of the blame.

Towards the end of April Nelson felt obliged to return to Malta. The Hamiltons accompanied him in the Foudroyant, a circumstance which not unnaturally gave rise to many gross comments. The cruise lasted through May, and on June 1st the Foudroyant again arrived at Palermo. Nelson was extremely anxious to take her to England. He had arranged that the Hamiltons were to go with him. Keith, however, was resolute. The destruction of the Queen Charlotte, a ship of 100 guns, accidentally burnt off Leghorn on March 17th, was a serious loss to the fleet; and as no reinforcements were being sent from England, he deemed it unadvisable to send a powerful ship, such as the Foudroyant, off the station. He was perhaps also unwilling that the scandal, already in the air, should

appear to be sanctioned by the Commander-in-Chief. The Seahorse, he wrote to Nelson, would be at Mahon under orders for England. If he and his friends would go there, they might return in her or in any troopship they preferred, but he was quite unable to send either a line-of-battle ship or larger frigate.

Lady Hamilton had no particular wish to go by sea. She would have consented to take a passage in the Foudroyant; she refused to do so in a trooper, and Nelson in this was entirely at her orders. They accordingly resolved to accompany the Queen to Vienna, and went, all together, to Leghorn in the Foudroyant; thence to Ancona, where they took a passage to Trieste in a Russian frigate, with a Dalmatian captain and a Neapolitan first-lieutenant. The accommodation was cramped; no preparations for distinguished visitors had been made; the ship was in bad order, and Nelson was very ill. Hamilton too was seriously, it was feared dangerously, ill; and the voyage was wretched in the extreme.

At Vienna, where the party remained some days, Nelson was received with great distinction. On September 29th they were at Prague, where a grand fête in honour of his birthday was given by the Archduke Charles. Thence they went on to Dresden and stayed for a few days with Mr. Hugh Elliot, Lord Minto's brother, and at that time ambassador to the King of Saxony. There they met Mrs. St. George, a lively and imaginative young widow, who filled several pages of her letters and journal with exaggerated accounts of Nelson and his friends. That Lady Hamilton was exceedingly stout is perfectly true; but notwithstanding

her birth and want of education, she had been for twenty years intimately associated with men of refined manners and conversation, and must have acquired a certain veneer of politeness. Nelson, too, is always described, except by Mrs. St. George, as scrupulously moderate at table; and though he never had, nor aped, the manners of a fine gentleman, it appears certain that he had a natural and kindly courtesy which was very winning. At Dresden, indeed, he was in bad health and very much in love; and it may be that Mrs. St. George did not easily forgive his neglect of her for the sake of a fat, vulgar, immoral female.

## CHAPTER VIII

## THE BATTLE OF THE BALTIC

NELSON with his party, having taken ship at Hamburg, landed at Yarmouth on November 6th, and, as if to emphasise the cause of his leaving the Mediterranean, he at once wrote to the Admiralty to say that "his health being perfectly re-established, it was his wish to serve immediately." It was his home-coming after the battle of the Nile, and, as he stepped on shore, he was received by an enthusiastic crowd, the people taking the horses from the carriage and dragging it up to the hotel. The Mayor and Corporation waited on him with an address and the freedom of the town, which had been voted to him long before as a native of Norfolk. The next day he, always accompanied by Sir William and Lady Hamilton, and the Corporation attended a thanksgiving service in the church; and on leaving the town escorted by a bodyguard of cavalry, he left £50 with the Mayor for the poor.

One thing, however, was afterwards noticed, a thing indeed noticeable but, under the circumstances, not to be wondered at; Lady Nelson did not come to meet him. She was at the time with her father-in-law in London, staying at Nerot's Hotel in St. James's Street:

and there, on the evening of November 8th, Nelson joined them. His reception by his wife is said to have been extremely cold. It naturally was so. Already she had judged his conduct and condemned him, on popular rumour. There is no doubt whatever that, in the ordinary phrase, she was an injured woman; but it must in fairness be asked if some portion of the blame did not rest with herself. Her husband had gained a victory, the fame of which had resounded through Europe; it is, perhaps, not too much to say that, during the last months of 1798, his personal renown overtopped that of any European warrior. He had won not only glory but, compared with his former limited means, fortune. He was wounded, he was ill; but Lady Nelson contented herself with writing letters of extreme propriety and remaining in England. Her partisans have excused this; she was obliged, they say, to stay and nurse her father-in-law, who was old and infirm. That she did stay is certain; that there was any obligation beyond her own choice is doubtful; the old man had daughters and another daughter-in-law. The more common opinion will be that, under the circumstances, Lady Nelson's place was at her husband's side. leave him, whom she knew to be almost childishly vain and sensitive, to the care of a kindly, beautiful and fascinating courtesan, while she comforted him with elegant epistles from a distance, surely deserves some of the blame which our moral Pharisees have so freely dealt out to her husband. As they now met with feelings of disgust and irritation on both sides, it is not to be wondered at that the breach was widened by personal quarrels. There is no good reason to doubt that "Emma" was the main cause of these. "I am sick of hearing of 'Dear Lady Hamilton,' "Lady Nelson is said to have exclaimed on one occasion; probably enough she did so more than once. But it is far from improbable that the conduct of Lady Nelson's son may have been angrily discussed; that Lady Nelson wished him to be recognised as her husband's sole heir; and that Nelson refused to have anything more to do with him.

Of Josiah Nisbet very little is known, and that little is not favourable. He was at this time about twenty, and by his stepfather's interest had been made lieutenant, commander, and captain at an age when he ought to have been still in the midshipmen's berth. He seems to have been of intemperate habits and boorish demeanour. When drunk, he was violent and insulting. As his father had died insane very shortly after his birth, if not before it, it may be thought not impossible that his vices were congenital. Over and over again while in the Mediterranean his misconduct had been pardoned by St. Vincent or reproved by Nelson. His mother was naturally the one person who was blind to his faults; but if at this time she attempted to urge his interests on her husband, it may well be that her representations were received with peevish ill-humour or outbursts of anger. "Sooner than live the unhappy life I did when last I came to England," Nelson wrote some three or four months later, "I would stay abroad for ever." Nothing is really known more than that they separated by mutual agreement on January 13th, 1801, and did not again see each other; but Nelson, who was at all times most generous in money matters, settled on her

£1200 a year, which, at the time, he could very ill afford.

Four days later he hoisted his flag on board the San Josef at Plymouth, with orders to join the fleet in Torbay under the command of Lord St. Vincent. This he did in the end of January; but St. Vincent was just at that time appointed First Lord of the Admiralty; and by the middle of February Nelson was directed to shift his flag to the St. George and put himself under the orders of Sir Hyde Parker, appointed Commander-in-Chief of the fleet going to the Baltic, or, as it was officially described, "on a particular service." On February 21st Nelson arrived at Spithead, on the 23rd he went to London on three days' leave; was back at Portsmouth on the 26th, and on March 2nd sailed with a squadron of seven ships of the line to join Sir Hyde at Yarmouth. The fleet sailed from Yarmouth on March 12th.

The two months prior to this date have a very curious interest in the story of Nelson's life. After more than two years of almost unbroken intercourse, he was forced to leave Lady Hamilton just as she was on the point of becoming a mother. On January 29th or 30th she gave birth to a female child, afterwards known as Horatia. The circumstances of the birth were carefully concealed, and the very fact was kept a close secret which has been fully revealed only within the last few years. But the discovery of Nelson's letters to Lady Hamilton written during these two months leaves no room for further doubt; for in these letters Nelson, addressing Lady Hamilton as "My own dear wife—for such you are in my eyes and in the face of

Heaven," repeatedly speaks of "our dear little child," the "dear pledge of love" which she had given him. "I firmly believe," he says in one, "that this campaign will give us peace, and then we will set off for Bronte, there to stay till your uncle dies," that is, Sir William Hamilton, and till he himself could be "separated from her," Lady Nelson.

Many of these letters are written as to Mrs. Thomson or Thompson (the name is spelt indifferently) on behalf of Mrs. Thomson's "dear friend," occasionally spoken of as Mr. Thomson; and it has been suggested that Mr. Thomson was a real man, Mrs. Thomson a real woman, and that Nelson and Emma were merely go-betweens. A very slight examination of the correspondence shows that this is not so. The letters are all in Nelson's autograph, and whether written as from Nelson to Lady Hamilton or from Nelson to Mrs. Thomson in the name of her "dear friend," the sense is the same; he will marry her as soon as her "uncle" dies and he is free. But beside this, the mistakes and confusion of persons in the Thomson letters are frequent. Here is one: "To Mrs. Thomson. Your good and dear friend does not think it proper at present to write with his own hand. . . . He swears before Heaven that he will marry you as soon as it is possible. . . . He charges me to say how dear you are to him. . . . I have given Lord N. £100 this morning, for which he will give Lady Hamilton an order on his agents, and I beg that you will distribute it amongst those who have been useful to you on the late occasion." It is almost unnecessary to add that there was no Thomson a friend of Nelson's, no Mrs. Thomson a friend of Lady Hamilton's.

The war now pending with the Baltic Powers, that is to say, with Russia, Sweden, and Denmark, arose out of what has been commonly called the Armed Neutrality, a treaty by which these northern Powers had bound themselves to resist the right of "visit and search" claimed by the belligerents, and to enforce the acceptance of certain principles of so-called international law: among others, the security of a belligerent's property under a neutral flag,-"a free ship makes free goods"; that a blockade to be binding must be maintained by an adequate force; and that "contraband of war" must be distinctly defined beforehand. As these principles, if admitted by England, amounted to the import by France of naval stores, -- masts, hemp, tar-from the Baltic, to be paid for by French exports, the English Government was resolved to contest them.

Such a confederation of the northern Powers had been attempted twenty years before, and had fallen to pieces by its own intrinsic weakness. The renewal of it in 1800 grew out of various incidents of the war, in which English frigates had enforced their right of visit and search of merchant-ships, even under convoy of a ship of war. These had been partially, and might have been wholly, arranged, when the news of the capture of Malta by the English upset the balance of the Russian Emperor's mind, and prompted him, possibly under the influence of French intrigue, to lay an embargo on English shipping in Russian ports, and to declare his determination to maintain the principles of the former armed neutrality. Sweden at once joined him, and Denmark was coerced, not perhaps unwillingly. Such a confederation, if allowed to mature itself under the presidency of an autocratic and irresponsible maniac, might evidently be a source of very great danger to England, and it was resolved to break it up,—by diplomacy, if possible, but if not, by force.

When the fleet sailed from Yarmouth, the Government would seem to have thought that Denmark would be easily detached from the confederation; and the instructions forwarded to Sir Hyde Parker,—instructions which must have been framed by Lord St. Vincent—were to proceed to Reval as soon as the fleet could be withdrawn from before Copenhagen; to attack the Russian squadron there; to destroy the arsenal; to pass on to Cronstadt; and, in general, "to attack and endeavour to capture or destroy any ships of war or others belonging to Russia, and to annoy that Power in every manner not incompatible with the fair and acknowledged usages of war."

These instructions were apparently discussed in a council of war on March 23rd; and on the 24th Nelson wrote a long letter to Sir Hyde, urging the necessity of prompt and immediate action if the negotiations at Copenhagen should prove unsuccessful, as, by the intelligence they had received from the ambassador, seemed now most probable. This letter is a full and masterly exposition of the prospects before them, and should be studied in detail by every one who wishes to obtain an insight into Nelson's manner of considering not merely how to get at the enemy, but, in his own words, "how to get at them with the least risk to our ships." It is impossible to do more here than indicate his definite proposals. "You are now," he wrote, "about Kronborg. If the wind be fair, and you deter-

mine to attack the ships and Crown Islands, you must expect the natural issue of such a battle—ships crippled and perhaps one or two lost; for the wind which carries you in will most probably not bring out a crippled ship. This mode I call taking the bull by the horns. It, however, will not prevent the Reval ships, or Swedes, from joining the Danes; and to prevent this from taking effect is, in my humble opinion, a measure absolutely necessary—and still to attack Copenhagen. Two modes are in my view: one to pass Kronborg, taking the risk of damage, and to pass up the deepest and straightest channel above the Middle Grounds; and coming down the Garbar or King's Channel, to attack their floating batteries, etc. etc., as we find it convenient. It must have the effect of preventing a junction between the Russians, Swedes, and Danes, and may give us an opportunity of bombarding Copenhagen. . . . Should this mode of attack be ineligible, the passage of the Belt, I have no doubt, would be accomplished in four or five days, and then the attack by Dragör could be carried into effect and the junction of the Russians prevented. with every probability of success against the Danish floating batteries. . . . Supposing us through the Belt with the wind first westerly, would it not be possible to either go with the fleet, or detach ten ships of three or two decks, with one bomb or two fire-ships, to Reval, to destroy the Russian squadron at that place? I do not see the great risk of such a detachment, and with the remainder to attempt the business at Copenhagen. The measure may be thought bold, but I am of opinion the boldest measures are the safest."

It is of this last suggestion, "a suggestion worthy of

Napoleon himself," that Captain Mahan has well said: "If adopted, it would have brought down the Baltic Confederacy with a crash that would have resounded throughout Europe." It was, however, the first proposal which was ultimately adopted. When on the 30th the fleet passed Kronborg, entered the Sound, and anchored a few miles to the north of Copenhagen, it was seen, as Nelson had pointed out, that to go in from the north, exposing the ships to the fire of the Crown batteries, would be extremely dangerous, and could scarcely lead to a satisfactory result. While off Elsinore, Nelson had shifted his flag to the Elephant, commanded by Captain Foley who had so brilliantly led into action at the Nile, and he now at once volunteered to undertake the attack in the way he had proposed, from the southward, if the Admiral would give him ten ships of the line and all the smaller vessels. Sir Hyde readily agreed to this, giving him twelve ships of the line, and leaving all the details to his judgment. In the Amazon frigate he had already examined the position, and during the night of March 31st had the channel by which he was to pass carefully sounded. On the forenoon of April 1st the whole fleet moved on to an anchorage within six miles of the town, off the northwest end of the Middle Ground, a large shoal abreast of Copenhagen, dividing the channel at that part into two. By the easternmost of these the squadron under Nelson passed the town out of range of the batteries; and having anchored for the night to the south-east of the Middle Ground, examined the approach to the town by the inner or King's Channel, and given detailed orders to the several captains both in writing and

verbally, at half-past nine on April 2nd Nelson made the signal to weigh in succession.

The pilots, for the most part mates of small merchant vessels engaged in the Baltic trade, were unequal to the task of conducting these large ships in a channel from which the accustomed buovs had been removed. and Mr. Brierly, the master of the Bellona, piloted the squadron in, Captain George Murray leading in the Edgar. The second ship, the Agamemnon, keeping too much to the east, struck on the Middle Ground and remained fast: so also did the Bellona and Russell: the other nine ships passed up safely, and anchored abreast of the Danish floating batteries (heavily-armed hulks) ranged along the shoal water on the western side of the channel. At ten o'clock the action began. By halfpast eleven the nine English ships had taken their positions, and the battle had become general. The two lines were about two hundred yards apart; the distance between the English ships was about one hundred. The Elephant was in the centre of the line, opposite to the Danish commodore, Fischer, in the Dannebrog.

At one o'clock the battle was raging fiercely. None of the Danish ships had been silenced; many of the English had suffered severely, and the Bellona and Russell had hoisted signals of distress. Seeing this, but unable to see what was actually taking place, Parker made the signal to discontinue the action. "Leave off action!" said Nelson; "damn me, if I do. You know, Foley, I have a right to be blind sometimes"; and putting the glass to his blind eye, continued, "I really do not see the signal." The story, told on the unimpeachable evidence of Colonel Stewart, who was by Nelson's side

at the time, and to whom part of the conversation was addressed, has often been repeated as though marking in a most characteristic way the man's reckless and determined bravery. It is, however, very well established that Parker sent his flag-captain, Otway, with a verbal message that the signal was to be understood as permissive, and was made in that way so that the whole responsibility might rest with Parker, if Nelson judged it advisable to discontinue the action. If he thought it advisable to continue it, he was at liberty to do so. He judged it right to continue; and the little pantomime was only a joke, which Foley probably understood as well as he did. Stewart apparently had no knowledge of the message Otway had brought.

By two o'clock Nelson's resolution to continue the action was clearly justified. Most of the Danish ships had ceased to fire; and as their crews were constantly reinforced by men from the shore, the carnage on board was very great. Some of them had their cables cut and were drifting helplessly. The Dannebrog caught fire after nearly every man on board had been killed or wounded, and, drifting along the line, finally blew up, with the loss of all that had been unable to jump overboard. At half-past two, Nelson, seeing that this butchery (and by this time it was nothing more) must go on as long as the Danes continued sending fresh men to their ships, wrote a letter to the Crown Prince, which was taken on shore by Captain Sir Frederick Thesiger, serving on Nelson's staff as a volunteer, who, having been in the Swedish service, spoke the language sufficiently well. This celebrated letter ran: "Lord Nelson has directions to spare Denmark when no longer resisting; but if the firing is continued on the part of Denmark, Lord Nelson will be obliged to set on fire all the floating batteries he has taken, without having the power of saving the brave Danes who have defended them. NELSON AND BRONTE, Vice-Admiral, under the command of Admiral Sir Hyde Parker. Dated on board his Britannic Majesty's ship Elephant, Copenhagen Roads, April 2nd, 1801." The letter brought on a truce, and the truce led to an armistice which effectively detached Denmark from the Confederation. It was suggested at the time, and has since been often asserted, that the humanity which appeared in the words of Nelson's letter was a mere pretext, a subterfuge not altogether honourable, and that the real motive of it was the hope of extricating the squadron from a position of extreme danger; for that, even if the Danish hulks were completely silenced or destroyed, the English squadron could not leave the position they were in without becoming exposed to the fire of the Three Crowns and other batteries, which they were in no state to resist. There is no evidence in support of such an allegation. Nelson himself most positively denied its truth: the flag of truce, he asserted. was sent for the sake of humanity, and for nothing else; and as a certain fact, patent to friends and enemies, he made no attempt during the first hours of the truce to get the ships out of the position they were in. A message was sent to Parker, and till the answer came and the truce was confirmed, it was uncertain whether the action might not be renewed; but during this time none of the English ships even shifted berth; where they were at half-past two they still were at nightfall. -when General Lindholm, who had been on board the London, Parker's flagship, returned to Copenhagen, having agreed that hostilities were to be suspended for twenty-four hours and that the prizes were to be surrendered.

Nelson then returned to the St. George thoroughly worn out, having been awake all the previous night; though even then he could not go to bed without writing a few lines to Lady Hamilton. And these lines took the not very unusual form of verses, which Pettigrew, and others following him, have supposed to be Nelson's own composition. The most unlikely men, when sick of love, have been known to break into verse; but as these particular verses, sad rubbish though they are, are correct in their grammar and rhythm, but faulty in their seamanship, they cannot be Nelson's. The presumption is that they were Lord William Gordon's, who had constituted himself the poet of the lovers. "Recommend to Lord William not to make songs about us, for fear we should not deserve his good opinion," Nelson had written to Lady Hamilton only three days before; and these particular verses seemed to him an appropriate message of love as he hastily wrote them down and dated them: "St. George, April 2nd, 1801, at nine o'clock at night, very tired after a hard-fought battle."

Early on the following morning Nelson returned to the *Elephant*, still in the King's Channel, and was occupied during the day in refitting the ships and removing the prizes. The surrender of some of these was doubtful. The case of one has been a fertile source of legend and myth. According to Colonel Stewart's narrative, written at the time, a question arose whether the *Zealand* had struck or not, her pennant having been left flying. Nelson went in person on board the Commodore's ship, which he found commanded by a Captain Müller whom he had known in the West Indies, and in friendly conversation with him succeeded in arranging the point in dispute. A similar difficulty about the surrender of the *Holstein*, which was overcome by a ruse of Captain Otway's, has been confused with this; and Nelson's meeting with Müller has been travestied in various ways into a meeting with a Lieutenant Willemoes whom he never saw.

On the 4th Nelson was instructed to visit the Crown Prince with power to negotiate an armistice, which, after some discussion, was concluded on the 9th. The term demanded by Nelson was fourteen weeks. To this the Danish Commissioners objected, urging their apprehension of the Court of Russia; on which Nelson, with most undiplomatic frankness, said that he wished to have time to act against the Russian fleet and return to Copenhagen. One of the Danes, in refusing to give way, spoke of a renewal of hostilities. Nelson knew sufficient French to understand what was said; and "Turning to one of his friends [probably Colonel Stewart, who relates the story, exclaimed with warmth, 'Renew hostilities! Tell him we are ready at a moment; ready to bombard this very night." The Commissioner apologised, but not till after long argument was the term insisted on by Nelson accepted.

The news of the victory reached London on the 15th, and on the 16th the two Houses of Parliament unanimously passed votes of thanks to Sir Hyde Parker, to Nelson, to Rear-Admiral Graves, to Colonel Stewart, and the officers, seamen, and marines of the fleet. And

in the House of Commons an address to the King was agreed to, praying that a monument might be erected in St. Paul's to the memory of Captain Mosse of the *Monarch*, and of Captain Riou of the *Amazon*, who had been killed in the battle. No medal, however, was given, and owing, it would seem, to some hint from the Government, there was no complimentary vote from the City of London; two omissions which annoyed Nelson exceedingly, and led him to write several vehement letters both to Lord St. Vincent and to the Lord Mayor, with whom, in consequence of the neglect, he point-blank refused to dine.

On the 17th instructions were sent to Parker acquainting him with the death of the Emperor Paul on March 24th, and with the receipt of an amicable communication from the Court of St. Petersburg. The previous orders for an attack on the Russian fleet at Reval were therefore suspended for the present. He was directed to ascertain the practical intentions of the Russian Government as soon as possible by sending a flag of truce; and to take action only if the overtures were absolutely and positively rejected. Four days later Parker was recalled, and Nelson was appointed Commander-in-Chief. Parker's delay both before the battle and afterwards, his unwillingness to undertake anything on his own responsibility, had convinced St. Vincent of the desirability of having some one of a more energetic character in command of the fleet, and he, at least, knew that Nelson, with all his energy, was not the scatter-brained fire-eater which some people had supposed him.

The change took effect on May 5th, and Nelson, who had already vainly urged on Parker the advisability of

taking the fleet to the Gulf of Finland, immediately made the signal to prepare for sea. He was firmly convinced that the negotiations would be more satisfactory if the Russian Government realised the danger of delay; and was anxious at any rate to prevent the two Russian squadrons from joining, or the Russians "mixing the affairs of Denmark or Sweden with the detention of English ships."

On the 7th the fleet sailed from Kiöge Bay, where it had lain ever since the conclusion of the armistice: and, leaving Captain Murray as senior officer with seven sail of the line and all the bombs, fire-ships, etc., at Bornholm. Nelson with eleven ships of the line, a frigate and two sloops, came, on May 12th, off Reval, where, much to his disappointment, he found that the Russian squadron had got through the ice and gone to Cronstadt only a few days before. In his letters he repeatedly asserts that the English fleet might and ought to have been there on April 2nd, when the squadron would have been entirely at their mercy. "Nothing," he wrote, "if it had been right to make the attack, could have saved one ship of them in two hours after our entering the bay." It may be added that, if Parker could have considered the strategy of the campaign with the genius of his subordinate, the useless slaughter and maiming of nine hundred and forty-three Englishmen and double that number of Danes would have been avoided; for the Czar had been put to death on March 24th, and his son Alexander had no wish to continue the hostile policy of his father.

None the less, the Russian Government was unwilling now to appear to yield to pressure; and on May 16th

Nelson received a letter from the Russian Secretary, Count Pahlen, stating the Emperor's surprise at the appearance of such a force in Russian waters while the English Government was professing peaceful intentions, and imperatively requiring him to remove it. "I do not believe he would have written such a letter if the Russian fleet had been in Reval," was Nelson's comment on it to Lord St. Vincent. He, however, at once sailed out of the Gulf, and being in very feeble health, begged St. Vincent to relieve him from the command. "Since the 27th of April," he wrote on May 17th, "I have not been out of my cabin, except in being obliged to do the civil thing at Reval; nor do I expect to go out until I land in England, or am carried out of the ship." It was, too, just at this time that he received news of the death of his brother Maurice, a clerk in the Navy Office. has naturally affected me a good deal," he wrote; "if I do not get some repose very soon, another will go. Six sons are gone out of eight." That his health at this time was not good, we know on the authority of Colonel Stewart, who wrote: "His mind was not at ease; with him, mind and health invariably sympathised."

Nevertheless his statements should perhaps not be taken quite literally. Colonel Stewart's account of his mode of life does not represent him as a man at the point of death or anywhere near it. After speaking of the attention he paid to the health of his fleet and the economical expenditure of stores, Stewart continued: "His hour of rising was four or five o'clock, and of going to rest about ten; breakfast was never later than six, and generally nearer to five o'clock. A midshipman or two were always of the party; and I have known him

send during the middle watch to invite the little fellows to breakfast with him when relieved. At table with them, he would enter into their boyish jokes, and be the most youthful of the party. At dinner he invariably had every officer of the ship in their turn, and was both a polite and hospitable host. The whole ordinary business of the fleet was invariably despatched, as it had been by Earl St. Vincent, before eight o'clock. The great command of time which Lord Nelson thus gave himself, and the alertness which this example imparted throughout the fleet, can only be understood by those who witnessed it, or who know the value of early hours."

After a week or ten days in Rostock Bay, by the beginning of June he was again in Kiöge Bay. On the 13th he received permission to return to England, and at the same time instructions to invest Rear-Admiral Graves with the order of the Bath, which was done with much ceremony on the quarter-deck of the St. George on June 14th, Nelson laying the sword on the Rear-Admiral's shoulder in the name of the King. A few days later Sir Charles Pole arrived to relieve him, and on the 19th Nelson sailed for England in the Kite brig, leaving a farewell address to the admirals, captains, officers, and men, thanking them for the noble and honourable support they had given him, and attributing the extraordinary good health of the fleet "to the regularity, exact discipline, and cheerful obedience of every individual in it"; but, as if to mark that his praise was not a mere complimentary form, he specially excepted the officers of two of the gun-brigs and a bomb.

Nelson landed at Yarmouth on July 1st, and after visiting the hospitals to which the wounded at Copen-

hagen had been sent, went on to London. He had already, by patent of May 22nd, been raised to the dignity of a viscount under the title of Viscount Nelson of the Nile and Burnham Thorpe; and was now consulted as to his wish that, in default of his issue male, the barony might be continued to his father's heirsmale, or failing them, to the heirs-male of his sisters, Mrs. Bolton and Mrs. Matcham respectively; and this was finally prescribed by the patent of August 18th.

Meantime he was requested both by Mr. Addington and Lord St. Vincent to take command of a very considerable force of frigates, brigs, and smaller vessels for the defence of the coast between Orfordness and Beachy Head, against some part of which it was understood the French were preparing an attack. It was a particular service, independent of the command in the Downs, then held by Nelson's old captain, now Admiral Lutwidge; but St. Vincent quite well understood the delicacy of the situation, and that the appointment of a junior to an independent command in the Narrow Seas could not but be, in some respects, unpleasant to the older officer. St. Vincent's explanations, however, seem to have been taken in good part; and by the real wish on all sides to act for the good of the public service, and by forbearance and tact on one side and the other, there seems to have been absolutely no friction.

On preparing to assume his command, Nelson submitted to the Admiralty a paper stating his views on the defence of the river. He conceived that the object of the French would be London, and that for that they must aim at getting on shore as speedily as possible; "the dangers of a navigation of forty-eight hours"

appeared to him "an insurmountable objection to the rowing from Boulogne to the coast of Essex." Hence he judged that from Boulogne, Calais, or even Havre, they would try and land on the south coast of Kent or Sussex; or from Dunkirk, Ostend, and other parts of Flanders, on the coast of Essex or Suffolk; and he pointed out the necessity of ascertaining the number of small vessels in each port. He thought they might mean to attempt to surprise London with forty thousand men, and for that, to land twenty thousand west of Dover and twenty thousand north of the Thames. For this from two hundred to two hundred and fifty boats must be collected at Boulogne and the neighbouring ports, and as many at Dunkirk and the ports of Flanders; and on this supposition he elaborated his plan of defence. Two days later, on July 27th, he hoisted his flag on board the Unité frigate at Sheerness, but after a few days shifted it to the Medusa.

As soon as he could examine the situation for himself, he began to realise that the alarm which had been felt was quite unfounded. On August 2nd he wrote that fifty or sixty was the full number of boats, large and small, at Boulogne; on the 3rd, that "of the craft which I have seen, I do not think it possible to row them to England, and sail they cannot." On the 4th he had over some bombs, which presently sank some five of the enemy's largest vessels. "I think I may venture to assure you," he wrote to Addington, "that the French army will not embark at Boulogne for the invasion of England"; and on the 6th he wrote to Lord St. Vincent: "The information respecting the number of troops assembled at Boulogne cannot be true; it is

evidently a lie, most likely fabricated by some scoundrel emigrant in London. I have now more than ever reason to believe that the ports of Flushing and Flanders are much more likely places to embark men from than Calais, Boulogne or Dieppe; for in Flanders we cannot tell by our eyes what means they have collected for carrying an army." On the 7th he wrote again: "I pronounce that no embarkation can take place at Boulogne; whenever it comes forth, it will be from Flanders; and what a forlorn undertaking! Consider cross tides, etc. etc. As for rowing, that is impossible. It is perfectly right to be prepared against a mad government; but with the active force your lordship has given me, I may pronounce it impracticable."

He was less successful in obtaining some intelligence of the state of the enemy's preparations in the ports of the Low Countries, and could only hope they might make the attempt for which he was fully prepared. my command," he wrote from Margate on August 12th, "I find much zeal and good-humour, and should Mr. Bonaparte put himself in our way, I believe he will wish himself even in Corsica. I only hope, if he means to come, that it will be before September 14th, for my stamina is but ill suited for equinoctial gales and cold weather." The next day, however, he had more definite information. "The account of troops given by the French scoundrels in our pay is as false as they are. I am certain that in the towns of Boulogne and the surrounding hills the total number could not exceed two thousand men. The Galgo arrived in the night from off Ostend. Captain Hawkins assures me that the boats collected at Ostend and Blankenberg may amount to sixty or seventy; that he is sure they could not carry more than fifty or sixty men each; he understood that the poor devils of fishermen are sent off for Brest. Where, my dear lord, is our invasion to come from?"

It is well thus to trace the growth of Nelson's conviction, and to see how, starting with the belief that the attempt was one likely to be made in serious earnest, he became convinced, after a fortnight's careful study of the problem, that success was so utterly impossible that it was practically certain the attempt would not be made. Having arrived at this conclusion, he wished to assume the offensive and to punish the enemy for the insolent pretence which they had put forth. His plan was carefully drawn up; four divisions of boats, amounting in the aggregate to fifty-seven, were to row silently and by night into the harbour of Boulogne, and bring out or set fire to all the enemy's boats therein.

The attempt was made on the night of August 15th-16th; but though the flotilla moored in the mouth of the harbour was reached, it was found that the vessels were fastened to the shore and to each other with chains which could not be cut, nor in the darkness unshackled. Many of them were boarded and carried; but such a heavy fire of musketry was opened on them from the shore, that they could not be held even long enough to set them on fire. The attacking force was obliged to retreat not only without success, but having sustained a severe loss in killed and wounded.

Nelson's letters on this occasion would of themselves go far to explain the enthusiastic affection with which he was regarded by those under his command. His force had suffered a disastrous repulse; he might well expect his conduct to be harshly criticised, and the defeat must have been a cruel blow to his vanity. But his vanity, though prominent in success, seems to have been altogether absent in the hour of misfortune. He did not, as smaller men might have done, attempt to defend himself by showing that the fault did not lie with him; that his instructions had been departed from, his orders disobeyed, the assault weakly conducted. On the contrary, he declared: "The most astonishing bravery was evinced by many of our officers and men. . . . No person can be blamed for sending them to the attack but myself. . . . All behaved well: it was their misfortune to be sent on a service which the precautions of the enemy rendered impossible to succeed in"; and many more sentences of the same kind he wrote to the Admiralty, to Lord St. Vincent, and to Mr. Addington.

Notwithstanding the defeat of August 16th, Nelson was by no means satisfied of the impossibility of getting at the French boats, and several of his letters at this time contain suggestions or proposals of an attack on them at Flushing, or wherever they were. On October 3rd he proposed to St. Vincent "to run a fire-brig into Boulogne harbour the first fresh northerly wind"; or, failing that, "to make an 'infernal' of one of the bombs, and to have fire-boats, etc., to keep them for ever in hot water." "However," he added, "if we are on the eve of peace, it would be a bad reconciliation"; and in fact the very next day, October 4th, he had news of the preliminaries being signed.

A week later the French ambassador arrived in London with the ratification of the preliminaries, and was received by the people with enthusiastic delight. "Can

you cure madness?" Nelson wrote to Dr. Baird, "for I am mad that our damned scoundrels dragged a Frenchman's carriage. I am ashamed for my country." Nelson, in fact, had no love for the French, either in peace or war, and as he had written to Louis at Gaeta in 1799, "There is no way of dealing with a Frenchman but to knock him down," so now; and again in 1803 he wrote: "I would not upon any consideration have a Frenchman in the fleet, except as a prisoner. Forgive me; but my mother hated the French." Of his mother's likes or dislikes, Nelson could not possibly know much; but when we are inclined to think his frequent expressions of hatred and distrust unworthy of a great mind, we ought to remember that for the last ten years Nelson had seen nothing but the seamy side of the French character, and that to him the names of Frenchman and low-bred ruffian were practically synonymous. Nor was he at all singular in his dislike. it was a feature of the age; and, as is well known, Nelson's royal friend the Duke of Clarence could scarcely bring himself to be civil to his French guests, even when King, thirty or five-and-thirty years later.

However, now that the preliminaries were ratified, Nelson was anxious to be relieved from his command, and grumbled bitterly because the Admiralty thought it right not to relieve him immediately. With Troubridge he was more especially angry. Troubridge was his old friend and messmate: Troubridge, he thought, owed him something for insisting on the recognition of his services in the Mediterranean, and getting him the baronetcy; but now Troubridge seemed the principal hindrance to his going on shore. Of the many letters

175

which he wrote to Lady Hamilton about this time, there is scarcely one which does not contain some petulant expressions regarding him. "I daresay," he wrote on October 20th, "Master Troubridge is grown fat. I know I am grown lean with my complaint, which, but for their indifference about my health, would never have happened; or at least I should have got well long ago in a warm room, with a good fire and sincere friends."

It is, of course, an old-established belief among naval officers that the Admiralty, having neither body nor soul, has no fear of punishment in either this world or the next; but we may reasonably suppose that Nelson's valued and tried friends St. Vincent and Troubridge did not keep him afloat merely to sport with his ill-health, but rather because they judged it safer not to disarm in too great a hurry; and probably they understood that Nelson's chief complaint was a discontented longing to be with his mistress. Troubridge, at least, was familiarly acquainted with the truth and the scandal of Nelson's life at Palermo; and though neither he nor his chief wished to pose as a censor of morals, neither of them considered the love-sick Admiral's "pleasant vices" a sufficient excuse for modifying the requirements of the service.

## CHAPTER IX

## THE MEDITERRANEAN COMMAND

AT length, however, Nelson obtained leave of absence. On October 22nd he struck his flag and hurried to Merton, a place in Surrey, some eight or nine miles from Piccadilly, which he had commissioned Lady Hamilton to buy for him. Much of his correspondence during the previous month refers directly or indirectly to this and his wishes respecting it. The purchase was completed about the end of September or beginning of October, Davison writing that Nelson was to draw on him for any money he might want. Lady Hamilton was a good woman of business when her insatiable vanity or restless love of pleasure did not interfere; and she seems to have concluded this transaction with quickness, economy, and good taste. "You will do what is right," Nelson wrote to her, "and I should be happy in leaving everything to your management. I trust to your economy, for I have need of it; but I do earnestly request that all may be mine in the house, even to a pair of sheets, towels, etc."

On October 16th Sir William Hamilton wrote to Nelson: "We have now inhabited your Lordship's premises some days, and I can now speak with some certainty. I have lived with our dear Emma several years; I know her merit, have a great opinion of the head and heart that God Almighty has been pleased to give her; but a seaman alone could have given a fine woman full power to choose and fit up a residence for him without seeing it himself. You are in luck, for on my conscience, I verily believe that a place so suitable to your views could not have been found, and at so cheap a rate; for if you stay away three days longer, I do not think you can have any wish but you will find it completed here. And then, the bargain was fortunately struck three days before an idea of peace got abroad. Now every estate in the neighbourhood has increased in value, and you might get a thousand pounds to-morrow for your bargain."

This was the place to which Nelson now retired, and at which or at Hamilton's house, No. 23 Piccadilly, with but few breaks he spent the next fifteen or sixteen months; the Hamiltons and he living together and sharing the household expenses, which were very large, for Lady Hamilton, though no longer a young woman, had an insatiable craving for gaiety, and the house was seldom without visitors. The weekly payments varied very much, from under £30 to over £100; but taken one with another, they seem to have averaged about £60, or £3000 a year. The lowest amount is £27; but immediately following it is £77, and for one week it is as much as £218; of which, however, £103 is to the winemerchant, and £9:19:6 for maraschino; which would seem to imply that Lady Hamilton was in both respects ready to do justice to the alliterative toast proposed as the feminine equivalent of the masculine "Wine and Women."

Hamilton had formerly been fond of society; but he was now feeling the full weight of his seventy-one years and of the free living in which he had indulged through the greater part of them. He wanted rest; he wanted to make his own arrangements; he objected to having twelve or fourteen at table every day, and those constantly changing. He was discontented and out of his discontent came friction. So, turning the matter over in his mind, he put his thoughts on paper in an extraordinary memorandum to his wife, in which, stating his several grievances, he resolved that a separation would be preferable to a continuance of "silly altercations"; but as he was not likely to trouble "any party" much longer, it would be best for them to "bear and forbear"; more especially as a separation would make Lord Nelson, "our best friend, very uncomfortable," and "would be more sensibly felt by him than by us." "I well know," he added, "the purity of Lord Nelson's friendship for Emma and me."

On April 26th, 1802, Nelson's father died at Bath. He was then in his seventy-ninth year and had been failing for some time. His relations with his son had been always affectionate; but as Lady Nelson was much with the old man, her husband had seen little or nothing of him since his return from the Baltic. He certainly did not attend the funeral, being at the time at Merton In July and August he, with the Hamiltons, made a tour into Wales. As they passed through Oxford he received an honorary degree, and on visiting Monmouth, Hereford, and Worcester, was admitted to the freedom of those cities. By the beginning of September he was back at Merton, and there he remained till the end of the year.

The party then moved to Piccadilly, and there on April 6th, 1803, Sir William Hamilton died. He had been failing for some months, and during his last illness was affectionately attended by both his wife and Nelson. It is difficult to conceive anything more strange than the relations of the three at this time. Nelson and Hamilton were on terms of the closest friendship, each one expressing the warmest affection and esteem for the other. For the last six nights of Hamilton's life, Nelson sat by his bedside; and at his death, Nelson held his hand while his wife supported his pillow. A few hours later Nelson wrote to the Duke of Clarence: "My dear friend Sir William Hamilton died this morning; the world never, never lost a more upright and accomplished gentleman." To Davison he wrote on the same day: "Poor Lady Hamilton is, as you may expect, desolate." And yet we know now, by the evidence of letters in Nelson's own writing, that for at least three years he had been dishonouring this dear friend, that he was the father of "poor Lady Hamilton's" little girl, and that the two had been calculating on, if not wishing for, the "upright and accomplished gentleman's" death.

Was this all hypocrisy? In most cases the answer would be an unhesitating "Yes"; in this particular case it may be a doubting "No." There is at least room to believe that Nelson had persuaded himself, or had been persuaded by his mistress, that she was Hamilton's wife only in name; that he had married her only to have a lady at the head of his table. His most intimate letters to Emma always refer to Sir William as her "uncle," and he addressed her as the "most virtuous of women," which, if he had known or suspected her antecedents,

would surely have been most bitter irony. But the position is a psychological puzzle which does not admit of any quite satisfactory solution.

Meantime the prospect of a renewal of hostilities had been occupying Nelson's thoughts, and before the end of March it was settled that, in such an event, he should go to the Mediterranean as Commander-in-Chief. After some weeks of uncertainty war was declared on May 16th, and with a prompt despatch which the English Government has not always shown, Nelson's commission was dated on the very same day; on the 18th he hoisted his flag on board the Victory at Portsmouth, and put to sea on the 20th. His specific instructions were to proceed off Toulon with such part of the squadron under his command as he might judge adequate to the service, and take such a position as he should consider most proper for enabling him to take, sink, burn, or otherwise destroy any ships or vessels belonging to France or French citizens; to detain any Dutch ships which he might fall in with; to keep watch on the conduct of the Court of Spain, as well as of any naval preparations that might be made in Spanish ports; and to prevent any squadron of Spanish ships of war from entering a French port or forming a junction with a French or Dutch squadron.

On May 17th Admiral Cornwallis had sailed from Plymouth to institute a close blockade of Brest; on the 19th he was off the port; and as it was judged advisable to strengthen his fleet as much as possible against any immediate attempt at evasion, Nelson was directed to communicate with him in passing, and if he wished it, to leave the *Victory* with him and proceed to the Mediter-

ranean in the Amphion frigate. Off Ushant, however, he did not succeed in meeting Cornwallis; and as it seemed necessary for him to get to Toulon without delay, he left the Victory with orders to follow him as soon as Cornwallis could spare her, and pursued his voyage in the Amphion.

After touching at Malta on June 15th and passing Naples on the 25th, on July 8th he joined the fleet off The force at his disposal was curiously small, considering the numerous and varied duties which he was called on to perform. Nine French ships of the line, with five frigates, were said to be in Toulon. Seven ships of the line were clearly to be seen. The squadron with Nelson at this time consisted of nine ships of the line, two of which were of 64 guns; all were foul from having been long from England, were weakly manned and sickly. With these Nelson undertook the military blockade of the port, and carried it through with a stringency that has never been paralleled. Brest was, indeed, repeatedly blockaded during the war, but with larger force and continual reinforcements or refreshments from Plymouth. Off Toulon Nelson's squadron was generally inferior in point of numbers to the enemy, and with the absolutely small size of the squadron the inferiority was large in proportion. Reinforcements seldom reached him; refreshments there were none. except what he himself ordered; he had no dockyard, no stores, no base to fall back on; everything had to be provided for by himself. It was in this more than in the prolonged duration of the effort that the exceptional nature of the blockade consisted.

In giving some account of this remarkable service, it

is well to explain that, while a commercial blockade consists in absolutely sealing the port, so that no merchant-ship can attempt to enter or leave it without incurring the most serious risk of being captured and the certainty of being condemned, a military blockade is merely watching the port with a force sufficient to bring the enemy's squadron to action should it come out. To keep up such a watch effectively requires a numerical strength which can spare a few ships and remain adequate for the service; but this strength Nelson never had. While the French were continually adding to the force of their squadron within, so that they raised their numbers from seven to eleven or even twelve ships of the line, Nelson seldom had off Toulon more than eight or nine, in consequence of the requirements of other parts of the station. He was thus generally unable to send the ships away for rest and refreshment by ones or twos at a time: the provisions were brought to the fleet where it was; and when the water began to run short, the whole fleet went to Maddalena, where the magnificent anchorage had been discovered and surveyed by Captain Ryves of the Agincourt, in whose honour Nelson named it Agincourt Sound. Of late years the Italians have followed Nelson's lead, and have made it a fortified roadstead.

The attempt to trace the story of the blockade from day to day would be as tedious in the reading as the blockade itself was in the execution; it will be sufficient to indicate Nelson's method, and to notice the occasional breaks in the terrible monotony, which of itself was exceedingly apt to wear out both officers and men. When Nelson joined the fleet, there was a good deal of

scurvy; onions and lemons would, he thought, eradicate it, or "a sight of the French squadron twenty leagues at sea would cure all complaints." The onions and lemons, however, had to do the work alone; and in summer or in winter, in fine weather or in foul, this squadron maintained a watch off Toulon for upwards of eighteen months without a break, save an occasional visit to Agincourt Sound; and at the end of the time the men were not only in better health than at the beginning, but were in absolutely good health.

Those writers who have described Nelson as a mere fighting hero have falsified both his character and his history. He was not more pre-eminent in the day of battle than he was in his attention to the thousand details which kept his men in good health, his ships in good order, and his fleet invincible. It has even been said, by some who mistake the means for the end, that his discipline was slack and his ships never in good order. There is an old proverb which says, "The proof of the pudding is in the eating"; and the best test of good discipline and good order is the ability to fight and to crush a superior enemy, a test which has no relation to the harassing of the men with ceaseless drill, or wearing them out with unmeaning work, and all the "spit and polish" which towards the close of the war came to be thought the thing most to be desired, till, amid misfortune and disaster, Broke brought the service back to understand that there really were things of more importance. And so it was with Nelson. The men were not wearied and disgusted with useless labour or needless restrictions; the constant exercise at sea, often in tempestuous weather, gave them sufficient

occupation, while every possible care was taken of their health and comfort.

By the report of the physician to the fleet in August 1805, it was shown that out of a force varying between six and eight thousand men, the total number of deaths during two years of exceptionally hard service was one hundred and ten, and the average number of men on the sick-list was one hundred and ninety, or twenty-five per thousand; whereas it appeared by a report of Sir Gilbert Blane's that in 1781, out of a force of twelve thousand men, fifteen hundred and seventy-seven had died in one year; of which number only fifty-nine had been killed or died of wounds; and that the average number on the sick-list was one in fifteen, or sixty-seven per thousand. Hawke and St. Vincent had already shown that it was possible to keep a fleet effective during a long period of arduous service; but it was for Nelson to show that the period of arduous service might be one of exceptionally good health with the death-rate reduced to a minimum.

The causes of this extraordinary result were: the attention paid to the victualling and purveying for the fleet; the issue of good wholesome wine instead of spirits; of fresh beef as often as it could possibly be procured; vegetables and fruit whenever they could be purchased; and an abundant supply of excellent sweet water allowed to the ships' companies. The ships were kept dry and well ventilated; there was no idleness intemperance, skulking, or malingering, for there were no spirits and there was no hospital. The sick were comfortably accommodated, placed on regular sick-diet, and supplied with fresh meat, vegetables, fruit, soft

bread, etc. Peruvian bark in wine or spirits was regularly served out to the men employed in wooding or watering; and cheerfulness among the men was promoted and encouraged by music, dancing, and theatrical amusements, the example of which was given by the Commander-in-Chief in the *Victory*. All these may seem mere prosaic details; but life is made up of details, as an hour is made up of seconds. It was the unceasing care and attention to these details that kept the men healthy, that rendered the long blockade possible, and that ensured a victory when, after long waiting, the enemy was at last met.

On July 30th the Victory joined the fleet, and Nelson at once hoisted his flag on board her, Hardy accompanying him as flag-captain, and George Murray, who had commanded the Edgar at Copenhagen, being with him as Captain of the Fleet. The Captain of the Fleet, who is either a rear-admiral or has temporary rank as such, is the chief of the staff of the Commander-in-Chief, and is mainly responsible to him for the due performance of all routine; he is supposed to keep him fully informed on all points of detail, and to consult with him as to the several requirements of the different ships; but not to originate plans or to issue orders, except in subordination to the Admiral. Attempts have, of course, frequently been made to assign to the Captain of the Fleet the credit of all that emanates from the Commanderin-Chief, as in the celebrated discussion that was raised about Rodney's great victory over De Grasse; but it is quite certain that Nelson owed nothing to Murray, except that good and zealous co-operation which, indeed, he got from every officer who came under his command.

Nelson's letters, memorandums, and orders during the whole time show that not only in name but in reality he directed and provided for everything.

From the first he believed that the French meant to come out as soon as they fancied themselves strong enough. Of their aim he could only guess; but in view of what they afterwards actually did, his speculations concerning it are extremely interesting. He took for granted that they intended to invade Sardinia; but that, he thought, would be done by a military expedition fitted out from Marseilles. It is, however, specially notable that as early as August 25th, 1803, he wrote to Mr. Addington: "My station to the westward of Toulon, an unusual one, has been taken upon an idea that the French fleet is bound out of the Straits, and probably to Ireland. It is said ten thousand men are collecting at Toulon. I shall follow them to the Antipodes." And the next day he wrote to Sir Richard Strachan, then senior officer at Gibraltar: "I wish to call your serious attention to what I am going to mention. The French fleet being perfectly ready for sea, seven of the line, six frigates, and some corvettes—two sail of the line are now rigging in the arsenal—I think it more than probable that they are bound to the westward, out of the Mediterranean. Therefore, as I am determined to follow them, go where they may, I wish you, in case they escape me, to send a frigate or sloop after them to find out their route, giving her a station where I may find her; and keep yourself either at the mouth of the Straits or off Europa Point, for I certainly shall not anchor at Gibraltar."

It does not appear that he ever considered the contemplated evasion to be connected with a plan for the invasion of England, and we may believe that he would have pronounced such a scheme altogether outside the possibilities of naval war; but we see that from the first he suspected their intention of going out of the Mediterranean, and made up his mind to follow them; whatever their aim, he was determined to be one of the party. This determination, from which he never wavered, seems to explain his manner of watching the port. He wished to fight the French as soon as they should be clear of the harbour; but over and over again he expressed his resolve not to hazard his ships against their batteries, nor even against their fleet till he had it in such a position that they could not slip back into Toulon after an indecisive action, leaving the English fleet crippled and obliged to raise the blockade.

This care for his ships, this resolve to do nothing rashly, is repeatedly expressed in language which was none the less stringent for being couched in friendly or even in affectionate terms. Writing, for instance, to Strachan and explaining his views as to the probability of war with Spain and the possibility of the Spaniards protecting the Aigle, a French 74 which Strachan was blockading in Cadiz, he concluded thus: "Recollect that it would be much better to let the French ship escape than to run too great a risk of losing the Donegal, yourself, and ship's company." A still more marked instance of this care and this resolve appears in a letter of May 24th, 1804. On that day Rear-Admiral Campbell in the Canopus of 80 guns, with the Donegal of 74 and the Amazon frigate, was close in with Cape Sepet, while the main body of the fleet was out of sight to seaward. Five French ships of the line, with three frigates and several

gunboats, came out of the harbour, in the evident intention of cutting off the small reconnoitring squadron. Campbell of course made sail away from them, and the French, unwilling to risk even the possibility of being drawn too far from the shelter of their port, gave up the pursuit. It was not till six hours later that the Canopus and her consorts rejoined the fleet. It was then that Nelson wrote to the Rear-Admiral: "I am more obliged to you than I can express for your not allowing the very superior force of the enemy to bring you to action. Whatever credit would have accrued to your own and your gallant companions' exertions, no sound advantages could have arisen to our country, for, so close to their own harbour, they could always have returned, and left your ships unfit, probably, to keep the sea. I again, my dear Admiral, thank you for your conduct."

Many more instances might be quoted, all tending to the same point, to show how, with all his resolution to fight, he was no hot-brained bully to run needless or useless risks, still less to have his ships beaten to pieces against stone walls and solid fortifications. When in 1854 the country howled against Sir Charles Napier because in the course of a few summer months he did not take or destroy the massive fortifications of Cronstadt and the enemy's fleet behind them, it would have been well had it been reminded that neither Hawke nor Nelson, St. Vincent nor Cornwallis, had cared to lay their ships against the far inferior defences of Toulon, of Brest, or even of Cadiz; that so long as the enemy's fleet remained within these defences it was practically safe. When it came out, Hawke had for all time laid down a lesson as to what to do with it.

Through the summer of 1804 it was the custom of the French Admiral, M. La Touche-Tréville (the ci-devant Comte de la Touche-Tréville), every now and then to get a few ships under way in the outer roadstead, and when the wind favoured him, to come out a short distance, and return. It was a very proper exercise, and the only way in which he could give his men some little sea-training. It happened that at different periods of his career Nelson had been unfavourably impressed by La Touche-Tréville's conduct. It was he who in 1780, in command of the 36-gun frigate Hermione, sailed from Boston after arrogantly pledging himself to clear the coast of British frigates, and a few days later was defeated and put to flight by the 32-gun frigate Iris. It was he who, in December, 1792, had been sent to Naples to enforce the demands of the Republic, and had executed his mission with an insolence which, we may be sure, was not softened in the narration which reached Nelson's ears. And again, it was he who had commanded at Boulogne in August, 1801, and whose precautions had convicted Nelson of an error. scarcely be doubted that this was, in Nelson's eyes, an aggravation of what the English, at any rate, called his poltroonery at Boston and his insolence at Naples. In reality he seems to have been a capable officer, as officers went in the French navy; one of the few of the old navy who had remained in France; a gentleman by birth, though he had early accepted service under the Republic, and had, apparently, assumed the Republican discourtesy of manner and the Napoleonic method of misrepresenting facts.

Rightly or wrongly, it is certain that Nelson was

strongly prepossessed against him; and his wrath was extreme when he learned that, in a despatch dated June 15th, 1804, which was published in the Moniteur, he had stated that, having got under way on the 14th and stood out of the harbour, the English Admiral in the offing had taken flight; that he had chased him till nightfall, and that the next morning he was out of sight. Nelson's description of the incident written at the time was as follows: "Upon the 14th, M. La Touche came out with eight sail of the line and six frigates, cut a caper off Sepet, and went in again. I was off with five ships of the line, and brought to for his attack, although I did not believe that anything was meant serious, but merely a gasconade." He does not appear to have seen the offensive number of the Moniteur till August 8th, when he wrote to his brother: "I have been expecting M. La Touche to give me a meeting every day for this year past, and only hope he will come out before I go hence. . . . You will have seen his letter of how he chased me and how I ran. I keep it, and by God, if I take him he shall eat it." To the Admiralty he wrote more soberly; but in his familiar letters he gave free vent to his wrath, and the French Admiral's name is always borne on a torrent of invective, accompanied with the expression of a hope to "get a shake at him." La Touche, however, "gave him the slip" by dving on August 18th. "He is gone," Nelson wrote as a farewell shot when the news reached him, "and all his lies with him." The command of the French fleet devolved on Rear-Admiral Dumanoir, who after a few weeks was superseded by Vice-Admiral Villeneuve, an officer of the old navy who had served under Suffren; the same who, in the Guillaume Tell, had commanded the rear of the French fleet at the Nile, and for his escape, which, in the judgment of competent persons, betrayed a lamentable want of decision, was considered by Napoleon as born under a fortunate star.

Meantime, Nelson considered it almost certain that the French were meditating a dash at the West Indies. In several letters during September he wrote to the same effect. The Russian force was so strong that it was not likely they would venture eastward. "Suppose this fleet escapes, and gets out of the Straits, I rather think I should bend my course to the westward; for if they carry seven thousand men—with what they have at Martinique and Guadeloupe—St. Lucia, Grenada, St. Vincent, Antigua, and St. Kitts would fall, and in that case England would be so clamorous for peace that we should humble ourselves. . . . Whatever may be their destination, I shall certainly follow, be it even to the East Indies. Such a pursuit would do more, perhaps, towards restoring me to health than all the doctors."

He was, indeed, by this time longing to be at home again. It would seem that his health was really better during this year than it had been since the repulse at Teneriffe. The shock to his system by the loss of his arm and the excruciating pain which he had afterwar is suffered, followed by the severe wound he had received in the Battle of the Nile, was yielding to time; his position as Commander-in-Chief was all that he could wish; with Lord Melville he was on perfectly friendly terms; and it may well be that, as to his domestic relations, his mind was more at ease. What he considered the principal obstacle in the way of his marrying Lady

Hamilton was removed: he probably thought that the difficulty of his being already married might be surmounted; and in any case, time had soothed the irritation of the quarrel, and left him to the happiness which he found in Emma's affection, with, it may be, something of the repose of security and gratified passion. But from time to time a longing for her society returned, and with it the old feeling of ill-health; "with him," as Stewart wrote in the Baltic, "mind and health invariably sympathised." It was thus that in August, 1804, several of his letters complain of his being ill; that on the 15th he wrote officially requesting leave of absence for the winter; he was anxious to serve, and would hope, if allowed, to resume the command in the spring, but at present his "shattered carcase" required rest. The fit, however, happily wore off; and by October he would seem to have forgotten it, or at any rate, to have preferred his hope of meeting the French fleet at sea.

In his continual quest for intelligence he had all the available Italian and Spanish newspapers regularly sent to him, and Dr. Scott, the chaplain of the *Victory*, who acted as his foreign secretary, read them to him, so far as they contained anything of importance or interest. One day, learning in this manner that a considerable quantity of church-plate was to be sold at Barcelona, he suggested to Scott to go there on a week's leave, and buy some of it for him; at the same time, perhaps, he might learn something of the public feeling in the place. His desire to have this church-plate seemed curious; but after he got it the mystery was explained: he had conceived the pretty

idea of making a present to the little villages along the north coast of Sardinia, where his ships and fleet had been kindly received. To the church at Maddalena he presented a cross and two candlesticks of silver with a holograph letter, addressed to "The Revd. the Superior of the Church at Maddalena," which ran thus: "Victory, October 18th, 1804. REVD. SIR-I have to request that I may be allowed to present to the Church at Maddalena a piece of church-plate as a small token of my esteem for the worthy inhabitants, and of my remembrance of the hospitable treatment His Majesty's fleet under my command has ever received from them. May God bless us all.—I remain, Revd. Sir, your most obedient servant, Nelson and Bronte. The Rev. Dr. Scott will present it to you." This letter, with an Italian translation, presumably by Scott, still hangs, framed and glazed, in the church. It was by such little acts of kindness and consideration that he won the hearts of the people, and obtained their eager and zealous assistance, which might now become of the first importance, as, by the violent seizure of the Spanish treasure-ships off Cape St. Mary's on October 5th, war with Spain was practically commenced, and was formally declared on December 12th.

On January 19th, 1805, Nelson with his little fleet was at Maddalena, when at three o'clock in the afternoon Captain Moubray in the Active came in with the news that the French had put to sea the day before; that he had parted from them at ten o'clock at night abreast of Ajaccio, then steering south with a strong gale at north-west. The fleet immediately prepared for sea, and before six o'clock, with a slight breeze at west-north-

west, ran through the strait between Biche and Sardinia, and stood to the southward, hoping to meet the enemy off the south end of Sardinia. The running through this strait in the dark,—a "passage so narrow that the ships could only pass one at a time, each following the stern lights of its leader,"—has been made the subject of wondering admiration by writers ignorant of the sea and of naval usage, who would seem to have fancied that a fleet leaving a harbour usually goes out like a herd of swine crowding through a gateway. The manœuvre was one of everyday occurrence, and to a fleet that had been blockading Toulon for eighteen months was a mere matter of course.

Nelson, however, had no intelligence as to where the French were going; but many things concurred to make him believe they were not, as he had previously expected, bound out of the Mediterranean. For a fortnight the wind had been easterly; they had waited till it changed to the west, and then put to sea; of that he was certain. For some weeks he had information from trustworthy sources that they were assembling troops at Toulon, and a body of cavalry; that they had embarked seven thousand soldiers (which, crowded into the few ships, eleven sail of the line and some frigates. precluded the idea of a long voyage), five thousand saddles, and some field-artillery. All these seemed to indicate Egypt as their destination; but he did not, as has been supposed, hurry off to Egypt on a blind impulse. The persistent westerly gales, and the position he took up to the south-west of Sardinia, made him certain that, although the Active and Seahorse had seen them on the west of Corsica, they had not passed to the southward

on the west side of Sardinia. He convinced himself that they had gone neither to Naples nor to Sicily; they had therefore either put back to Toulon disabled, or had gone to Egypt. If they had put back disabled, they were harmless for the time, and it did not matter whether he was off Toulon or off Alexandria; but if they had gone to Egypt, clearly they ought to be followed. So to Egypt he went. As he did not find them there, he at once returned. At Malta, on February 19th, he learned that they had put back to Toulon in a very crippled state; but several weeks later, on March 27th, he still wrote: "The original destination of the French fleet, I am every day more and more confirmed, was Egypt."

## CHAPTER X

## THE PURSUIT TO THE WEST INDIES

THE fleet was at this time provisioning in the Gulf of Palmas, whence it moved on April 1st to Pula Road at the south end of Sardinia, and sailed on the 3rd, probably with the intention of returning off Toulon; but on the forenoon of the 4th the Phabe joined with the news that the French had again put to sea on March 30th. That Nelson should suppose they were bound for Egypt was natural; but he did not, as has been said, immediately rush off in wild chase of a phantom. "I have covered the channel," he wrote on the 5th, "from Barbary to Toro with frigates and the fleet. The French could not pass before to-day, if this be their route. I must leave as little as possible to chance, and I shall make sure they are to the eastward of me before I risk either Sardinia, Sicily, or Naples; for they may delay their time of coming even this distance, from an expectation that I shall push for Egypt, and thus leave them at liberty to act against Sardinia, Sicily, or Naples." And again on the 7th he wrote: "I must be guided in my further movements by such information as I may be able to obtain; but I shall neither go to the eastward of Sicily or to the westward of Sardinia until I know some thing positive,"

By the 9th he had come to the conclusion that the enemy had gone westward, and endeavoured to follow; but was then met by a persistent westerly wind, against which his progress was necessarily very slow. On the 18th he learned that with a fresh easterly wind they had passed out of the Mediterranean on the 8th, and had been joined by some of the Spanish ships from Cadiz. For him the wind continued "foul, dead foul!" and it was not till May 4th that he anchored at Tetuan, where he watered. On the 6th he went into Gibraltar Bay to provision; but the wind coming easterly, he at once put to sea, with the victuallers in tow, intending to wait off Cape St. Vincent for certain information. On the 9th he anchored in Lagos Bay, where he filled up with provisions; and having, by letters from Lisbon and a personal communication from his friend Captain Campbell of the Portuguese navy, convinced himself that the combined fleet, now numbering eighteen sail of the line, had really gone to the West Indies with the probable intention of attacking Jamaica, he sailed on the 11th in pursuit.

It has been many times repeated, and is very generally believed, that in doing this Nelson was falling into a cunning and deep-laid trap; that he was being decoyed to the West Indies, and was opening the way for an overpowering concentration of force in the Channel, and for a direct invasion of England by the army already assembled at Boulogne; and that this invasion failed to take effect only through the weakness and ineptitude of the French admiral. In such statements there is just enough of known fact to give a plausible appearance of truth to the whole, which is nevertheless wildly

erroneous. It is true that there was an army assembled at Boulogne; it is probably, and indeed, though it has been doubted, almost certainly, true that an invasion of England was intended; it is true that there was a plan for an overpowering concentration in the Channel; it is even true that there was a trap; but that Nelson fell into it is not true; and the assertion that he was decoyed from European waters is absurd.

In the previous December Napoleon had conceived a plan for accomplishing his long-threatened invasion of England, which does not seem to have been generally understood here, probably because no seaman could have considered it as feasible. In a few words, it was for the several fleets to break out of Brest, Rochefort, and Toulon at nearly the same time; to rendezvous at Martinique, and returning in a fleet of some fifty sail of the line, sweep the Channel, and open the way for the Army of England to cross over. The Rochefort squadron under Rear-Admiral Missiessy succeeded in getting to sea on January 11th. Villeneuve, as we have seen, made the attempt on January 17th, but falling into bad weather, put back with his fleet disabled, and did not succeed in getting away till March 30th, only to find on his arrival at Martinique on May 14th that Missiessy, having waited the prescribed forty-five days, had returned to France. Vice-Admiral Ganteaume at Brest was even less fortunate. The blockade maintained by Cornwallis or Gardner was so close and in such strength, that he was unable to do more than make a futile demonstration on April 15th, and return into the harbour.

But it was not only to join his missing colleagues

that Villeneuve went to Martinique. He, as Missiessy before him, had orders to harass, capture, or destroy such of the English settlements as he could. This was no doubt a feasible operation, which would have profitably occupied the forty days he was directed to wait for Ganteaume; but it required the command of the sea,that is, the absence of any force which could meet him on anything like equal terms; and to ensure this, every effort was made to conceal the destination of the fleet as it sailed from Cadiz, and to mislead Nelson in some other direction. Hence probably the reports which reached Nelson of the embarkation of troops, of cavalry, and of saddles, -all apparently groundless, though some few soldiers were taken on board and landed at Martinique or Guadeloupe. Hence also other reports systematically set on foot by Napoleon, intended to lead Nelson and other squadrons to the East Indies. That Nelson should go to Egypt, and Collingwood, from before Rochefort, should sail for the East Indies, was what Napoleon calculated on. But Nelson's judgment in waiting for definite intelligence before sailing for Egypt rendered one expectation abortive; and the early knowledge which the Admiralty had of Villeneuve's sailing for the West Indies resulted in an order for Collingwood to follow him with an efficient squadron. Collingwood, however, finding that Nelson had already done so, contented himself with sending him a small reinforcement, and with the rest of his squadron keeping watch on the Spanish ships in Cadiz, and preventing them being joined by those at Cartagena. The pursuit of Villeneuve, so far from being what Napoleon had aimed at, utterly spoiled the plan which on paper had looked so neat.

Villeneuve had captured the celebrated Diamond Rock, and having been joined by two more ships from France, had sailed from Martinique with the intention of attacking Antigua or Barbados. On June 8th, however, he learned that Nelson had arrived at Barbados four days before with fourteen ships. Villeneuve had been led to believe that Sir Alexander Cochrane was also at Barbados with five ships of the line; and not doubting for a moment that with only twenty ships he was no match for Nelson with nineteen, he resolved, and for the only time in his life without hesitation, to quit the West Indies and return, according to his instructions, to Ferrol.

Nelson had indeed arrived at Barbados on June 4th, after a remarkable passage, in which with foul ships, some of them, especially the Superb, scarcely seaworthy, he had gained twelve days on the allies; but he brought with him only ten sail of the line, and had found there only two more, the other three on the station having been detained at Jamaica. Still with these twelve he pushed on at once to look for the enemy. He wished to go direct to Martinique; had he done so, he would in all probability have overtaken Villeneuve under the lee of Dominica, in almost the very waters where Rodney had annihilated De Grasse twenty-three years before. But he was misled by a letter from the Governor of St. Lucia, with intelligence that the allied fleet had been seen passing to the southward, and was believed to have gone to Trinidad. Sir William Myers, the general at Barbados, offered to accompany him with two thousand soldiers, who were embarked at once, and the fleet sailed early the next morning. At Trinidad, however, where he anchored on the 7th, nothing had been seen of the enemy; and vehemently cursing the false news and the sender of it, Nelson made sail for Martinique, where he hoped he might yet find them. But no fleet was there; and on the 12th, off Antigua, he learned that they had passed there four days earlier standing to the northward.

Concluding that Villeneuve was returning to Europe, he forthwith despatched the Curieux brig with the intelligence to the Admiralty, and, putting into St. John's, landed Sir William Myers and his two thousand men: then, on the 13th, having no further news of the enemy's fleet, he felt confirmed in his conjecture, and followed under a press of sail. It was a step which, he felt certain, neither Villeneuve nor Napoleon would expect; he was convinced they would suppose him fixed in the West Indies for a month at least; that he would fear an attack on Jamaica, and run blindly to leeward to relieve it. Napoleon certainly did think so: he took for granted that Villeneuve, when he heard of Nelson's arrival, would judge it necessary to leave the West Indies, and that Nelson, missing him, would run down to Jamaica; but Napoleon was not a seaman, and did not understand a seaman's objection to run to leeward until something more definite than conjecture calls him. Nelson revolved all the chances in his mind, and, impressed with the conviction that Villeneuve had started on his homeward voyage, lost no time in following. He believed they were bound back into the Mediterranean; that they would go to Toulon; and then, fancying they had it to themselves, might carry out their design on Egypt. He thought that in going to the Mediterranean, as in going to the West Indies, they were trying to evade him, but the theory of a decoy did not occur to him. He was appointed to keep watch on the Toulon fleet, and to do so involved following it wherever it went, till he could catch and annihilate it. So he now steered for the Straits of Gibraltar, knowing that he would at any rate learn whether Villeneuve had passed, if indeed he did not hear of him or come up with him on the way.

On July 18th he joined Collingwood off Cadiz, but neither he nor Collingwood had seen or heard anything of the French fleet. Nelson had already seen the possibility of Villeneuve making for Ferrol, and four days after leaving Antigua had despatched a warning note to the captains of any ships cruising off the Western Islands, strongly recommending them to proceed at once towards Ferrol, to give the information to the admiral commanding off that port. This seems to have escaped notice; and it has been stated that Nelson, so engrossed in the idea of Egypt, could not entertain any idea of the French fleet going anywhere else than to the Straits; while Collingwood, with a more logical mind and a keener perception, at once saw what was intended. Such an opinion is altogether at variance with the fact. What Collingwood wrote on July 19th, after hearing Nelson's surmises and knowing that the enemy had not come to Gibraltar, was that they had probably gone to Ferrol, and intended to go to Ireland. In such a guess there was no particular sagacity. Nelson had already suggested to him that they had gone to Ferrol: long before they escaped from Toulon he had suggested that they might attempt to push for Ireland; and if at the present time he did not mention Ireland, it may have been that his information showed him that the state of affairs in Ireland was not such as to encourage the attempt at that time.

However that may have been, the fact remains that Collingwood's guess, so far as it was his, was altogether wrong; that Nelson's was altogether right. The French not only did not attempt the invasion of Ireland, which Collingwood considered "the real mark and butt of all their operations"; but from first to last during this campaign they had no intention of doing so. Nelson's calculation that if they did not come to the Straits they would go to Ferrol, was exactly what they were ordered to do. Of their further operations he said nothing; it may be that after the warning he had despatched on June 17th, he thought that if they got to Ferrol at all they might not care to quit it again; it may be that his expression, "Gone to the northward," implied an endeavour to join the Brest fleet, as to their doing which he might think his old friend Cornwallis would have a word to say.

On July 19th the fleet anchored at Gibraltar, and on the 20th Nelson noted in his diary that he went on shore for the first time since June 16th, 1803; and that he had not set foot out of the *Victory* for two years all but ten days.

Meanwhile the *Curieux*, pursuing her voyage under a press of sail, sighted and passed the French fleet, noting that they were steering a more northerly course than for Cadiz; on arriving in England therefore on July 8th, Bettesworth was able to say with some certainty that they would make the land near Cape Finisterre. Acting

on this information, the Admiralty at once sent orders for the squadrons before Rochefort and Ferrol to unite and look out for them some thirty or forty leagues to the westward. The fleet of fifteen sail of the line, thus collected under the command of Rear-Admiral Sir Robert Calder, met Villeneuve with his twenty ships on July 22nd. The weather was hazy, almost foggy; and the French, being to windward, were able to avoid a close action. A partial encounter, however, took place, as the result of which two of the Spanish ships were captured. The fleets continued in sight of each other during the 23rd and 24th, but there was no further fighting, and on the 28th Villeneuve anchored at Vigo. His fleet was short of provisions and water; a great many men were sick; several of the ships had received a good deal of damage on the 22nd, and three of them were not in a state to keep the sea. But Nelson had no intelligence of his movements until July 25th, when he learned that on June 19th the Curieux had seen the combined fleet standing on a more northerly course. Acting on this he proceeded northward, sending on word to Cornwallis that he was on his way to join him. He did actually join him on August 15th with eleven sail of the line, and, on an order from Cornwallis, went on in the Victory to Spithead, where he anchored on the 18th. The next day he struck his flag and went to Merton, where he passed the next few weeks.

It would appear then that, according to the idea so often formulated, it was during the three weeks immediately preceding August 15th that England was exposed to such imminent danger in consequence of Nelson's having been decoyed to the West Indies.

The dates have therefore a peculiar importance. We have seen that it was July 28th before Villeneuve could reach Vigo, and then in such a distressed condition that for the moment he could do nothing but try, on the 31st, to reach Ferrol. Napoleon had, however, sent orders that on no account was he to go into Ferrol; therefore, being unable to keep the sea, he went into Corunna, where he refitted as well as the resources of the place allowed; and, having been joined by the squadron in Ferrol, he put to sea on August 13th, with instructions to proceed off Brest, where Napoleon still hoped he might effect a junction with Ganteaume. He had with him at this time twenty-nine sail of the line. The five ships from Rochefort had also put to sea, intending to join him off Ferrol. He sent the Didon, a 44-gun frigate, to give them orders to join him off Brest; but the Didon was met on the way by the English 40-gun frigate Phænix, and was captured after a sharp action; the Rochefort squadron did not therefore get the orders intended for it, and had no further share in the campaign.

Whether, if Villeneuve had in accordance with his instructions come off Brest, he would have been able to effect a junction with Ganteaume, must seem very doubtful. After being reinforced by a great part of Nelson's squadron, Cornwallis had also been joined by most of Calder's, and had under his command a fleet of thirty-five ships of the line, in face of which the proposed junction might have been difficult or impossible. Villeneuve had, in fact, so clearly realised this, that when on August 15th he saw, in the north-eastern quarter, three ships (which were afterwards known to

be the *Phænix*, with her prize, in convoy of the 74-gun ship *Dragon*), and learned from a neutral merchant-ship that they were a detachment of an English fleet of twenty-five sail, he did not wait to investigate the intelligence, which was entirely false, but at once decided that the object of his voyage could not be carried out; and, without attempting it further, turned southward and went to Cadiz, his advanced ships chasing away the small squadron which, under Collingwood, was watching off the port. He anchored in the harbour of Cadiz on August 17th.

Collingwood at once sent the important news to England in the Euryalus frigate. She arrived at Spithead on September 1st; and on the 2nd, at five o'clock in the morning, Captain Blackwood called at Merton, where he found Nelson already up and dressed. Immediately on seeing him Nelson exclaimed, "I am sure you bring me news of the French and Spanish fleets, and I think I shall yet have to beat them." A few hours later Nelson followed him to London, and in talking over the operations that were intended on his return to the Mediterranean, he repeated, "Depend upon it, Blackwood, I shall yet give Mr. Villeneuve a drubbing."

The story, as afterwards told by Harrison, that Nelson was unwilling to leave Merton, and yielded only to the persuasions of Lady Hamilton, exclaiming, "If there were more Emmas there would be more Nelsons," is only one of the many lies with a purpose which Lady Hamilton put in circulation in order to strengthen the claims which she fancied she had on the Government. Southey, ignorantly or inconsiderately, gave it a currency which it could not otherwise have had, and it has thus

been very commonly received as absolute fact. on the contrary, absolute falsehood. It is indeed possible that Nelson may have uttered some endearing expressions of regret at having to quit his loved companion, but it is quite certain that it had been already arranged that he was to resume the command; the determination of the time had been left to M. Villeneuve, and it was now resolved that he should go out at once in the Victory. Other ships should follow as fast as they could be got ready. During the fortnight immediately preceding as well as subsequent to September 2nd, Nelson was repeatedly at the Admiralty and the office of the Secretary of State. In one of his visits to this latter he met, for the only time, the Duke of Wellington, then Sir Arthur Wellesley, who used in after years to give a lively account of the conversation, and of the double estimate of Nelson which he formed from it; of Nelson as a vapouring and vainglorious charlatan, and of Nelson as a well-informed officer and statesman, "really a very superior man." There is, in fact, abundant evidence that Nelson not infrequently displayed the unblushing and self-asserting vanity of a child, with all a child's love of praise and a woman's love of flattery, and that Lady Hamilton used to administer both to him in abundance. That Nelson could, on occasion, act as an officer and judge as a statesman, we knew before the Duke's story was made public.

### CHAPTER XI

#### TRAFALGAR

On September 13th Nelson finally left home. For that day he noted in his diary: "At half-past ten drove from dear, dear Merton, where I left all which I hold dear in this world, to go and serve my King and country. May the great God whom I adore enable me to fulfil the expectations of my country; and if it is His good pleasure that I should return, my thanks will never cease being offered up to the throne of His mercy. If it is His good providence to cut short my days upon earth, I bow with the greatest submission, relying that He will protect those so dear to me that I may leave behind. His will be done. Amen."

The next morning at six o'clock he arrived at Portsmouth, and at two, after being followed through the streets by an adoring crowd, he embarked at the bathing-machines. The spot pointed out by local tradition is a few yards to the west of the old Southsea pier, immediately below the Assembly Rooms. Canning and George Rose accompanied him on board and dined with him. Early the next morning, Sunday, September 15th, the *Victory* sailed with the *Euryalus* in company.

Meantime the squadron off Cadiz was being largely reinforced. Sir Richard Bickerton from the Mediterranean and Calder from the Bay of Biscay had joined Collingwood, bringing his numbers up to twenty-four ships of the line. To the several captains the service seemed merely the beginning of another interminable blockade, more irksome, more dreary, than any yet undertaken; for Collingwood was not a sympathetic commander, and finding his sole happiness in fond visions of home, he took no measures to alleviate the severity of the work. No visiting was allowed except on strict duty. Collingwood neither entertained himself nor permitted others to entertain. Country vessels from the African coast came into the fleet almost daily with fruit, vegetables, or live-stock; but the boats could not be hoisted out, and the fruit or vegetables could not be bought. In the familiar letters which Captain Codrington (then commanding the Orion, and twenty-two years later, as Sir Edward Codrington, Commander-in-Chief at Navarino) wrote to his wife, we have the state of things most clearly explained. "Is Lord Nelson coming to us?" he wrote. "I anxiously hope he may be, that I may once in my life see a Commander-in-Chief endeavouring to make a hard and disagreeable service as palatable to those serving under him as circumstances will admit of, and keeping up, by his example, that animation so necessary for such an occasion. charity's sake send us Lord Nelson, ye men of power!"

The men of power had granted the prayer before it was uttered. Nelson, in the *Victory*, joined the fleet on September 28th, having sent on the *Euryalus* to announce his coming, and with an order to Collingwood

neither to fire a salute nor hoist the colours. "It is as well," he wrote, "not to proclaim to the enemy every ship which may join the fleet." But if no official compliments were allowed, he was received with heartfelt rejoicing by those who had been groaning under the dismal rule of his predecessor. "Lord Nelson is arrived," wrote Codrington on the 29th; "a sort of general joy has been the consequence, and many good effects will arise from our change of system. He joined us too late yesterday for communication. I had not got any of your letters before I waited on Lord Nelson this morning. He received me in an easy, polite manner, and on giving me your letter said that, being entrusted with it by a lady, he made a point of delivering it himself"; and the next day: "The signal has been made this morning for all of us who did not dine on board the Victory yesterday to go there to-day. What our late chief will think of this, I don't know; but I well know what the fleet will think of the difference; and even you, our good wives, who have some causes of disapprobation, will allow the superiority of Nelson in all those social arrangements which bind his captains to their Admiral. The signal is made that boats may be hoisted out to buy fruit, stock, or anything from vessels coming into the fleet. This, I trust, will be a common signal hereafter, but it is the first day I have seen it made." Codrington had not been with Nelson before: he met him as a perfect stranger, and within two days was his devoted servant. The delicate attention about his wife's letter had captivated him; the invitation to a pleasant dinner had won him; the being treated as a man, a brother, and a dear friend enthralled him. So

it was with every one who came under the fascination of Nelson's genial manner; and the service was strengthened by the duty being performed with goodwill and the utmost of each man's soul, instead of grudgingly, with hate in the heart and fear of a court-martial before the eyes.

The retreat of Villeneuve to Cadiz put an end, for the moment, to Bonaparte's hopes of obtaining the command of the Channel and of being able to cross over to England. He had already been anxiously considering the state of affairs in Germany, where the alliance of Austria, Prussia, and Russia rendered his presence necessary; and now, understanding that it was impossible at that time to pursue his schemes for the invasion of England, he determined to let them rest for the present, and take them up again when he had demolished this threatening coalition. He accordingly broke up the camp at Boulogne on September 2nd, and led his army into Germany for one of his most brilliant campaigns. At the same time he sent Villeneuve orders to leave Cadiz and return to Toulon after ranging along the coast of Italy. Of the effective numbers of the fleet with Villeneuve he knew little: of those of the English fleet off Cadiz he knew less; and by repeated insulting messages to Villeneuve, and by threats to supersede him from the command if he did not immediately put to sea, he at last compelled him to do so.

From the day of his joining the fleet Nelson had endeavoured, by keeping out of sight of land, to deceive the French Admiral as to the English force. It appears, however, that Villeneuve was fairly well informed on this point, that he had a correct knowledge of the

general movements of the fleet, and that when, on October 3rd, Nelson detached Rear-Admiral Louis with six ships to fill up with provisions and water at Gibraltar and Tetuan, he was acquainted with their absence; on the 18th he received intelligence of their being at Gibraltar. Previous to parting company, Louis, whose flag was flying on board the Canopus, dined with Nelson, and on taking leave said, "You are sending us away, my Lord—the enemy will come out and we shall have no share in the battle." Nelson replied, "My dear Louis. I have no other means of keeping my fleet complete in provisions and water but by sending them in detachments to Gibraltar. The enemy will come out and we shall fight them, but there will be time for you to get back first. I look upon Canopus as my right hand, and I send you first to ensure your being here to help to beat them." He was, in fact, trusting to the secrecy of the ocean, and calculated that, though the stoppage of the coasting-trade and the strict prevention of supplies reaching Cadiz by sea must eventually force the allied fleet out, there had not yet been time for the blockade to make itself seriously felt. But Villeneuve. on receiving the news from Gibraltar, judged that the opportunity was as favourable as any at all likely to occur, and on the 19th he began to unmoor. Some of his ships got outside that same evening, others not till the next day; by the afternoon of the 20th he was fairly at sea, with thirty-three ships of the line besides frigates, and steering at first towards the west with a southerly wind, but later on towards the south-east with the wind very light at south-west.

The English fleet at this time consisted of twenty-

seven ships of the line of battle, and on the afternoon of the 19th was, for the most part, with Nelson about sixteen leagues west-south-west from Cadiz, but connected with the shore by a line of ships and frigates, which kept him constantly informed of the movements of the enemy. It was thus at once signalled to him that the allied fleet was coming out of harbour; and supposing, as was the case, that Villeneuve wished to enter the Mediterranean, he stood towards the Straits' mouth. At daybreak on the 20th the enemy was not in sight, and the fleet continued under easy sail, standing towards the north during the day, and back again towards the south during the night. At four o'clock on the morning of the 21st it wore towards the north; and at daylight, Cape Trafalgar then bearing east by south, distant seven leagues, the enemy's fleet was seen on the same line of bearing, distant about ten or twelve miles.

During the weeks of his watch on Cadiz, Nelson had been urging the necessity of sending him more ships. After Louis had gone to Gibraltar he had but twenty-three, while the enemy had thirty-six actually in the port. "Should they come out," he wrote to the First Lord of the Admiralty on October 5th, "I shall immediately bring them to battle; but though I should not doubt of spoiling any voyage they may attempt, yet I hope for the arrival of the ships from England, that as an enemy's fleet they may be annihilated." And the next day, in a private letter, he said: "It is annihilation that the country wants, and not merely a splendid victory of twenty-three to thirty-six—honourable to the parties concerned, but absolutely useless in the extended scale to bring Bonaparte to his marrow-bones. Numbers

can only annihilate; therefore I hope the Admiralty will send the fixed force as soon as possible."

He thought it probable that, by the junction of the Rochefort and Cartagena squadrons, the allies would be able to put forty-six ships in their line of battle, and he hoped that the return of Louis and fresh reinforcements would give him not less than forty. It was in this expectation that he drew up the celebrated memorandum which he issued to the fleet on October 9th. In it he said that, thinking it almost impossible under varying conditions of wind and weather to form a fleet of forty ships in line of battle without such loss of time as would probably cause also the loss of the opportunity of bringing the enemy to action, he had resolved to keep the fleet in its order of sailing. The order of sailing was to be the order of battle; and this order of sailing was prescribed as in two lines of sixteen ships each, with an advanced squadron of eight of the fastest two-deckers. ready to "make a line of twenty-four sail on whichever line he might direct." He then went on to consider the possible circumstances of the battle, according as the enemy should be to windward or to leeward; but in each case the dominant idea was that the lee line, under Collingwood, should concentrate its attack on the twelve ships in the enemy's rear, while he himself, with the weather line and the advanced squadron, should overawe the enemy's van and fall on their centre; so that, when the battle was fairly joined, the whole forty of the English ships should be clustered on about twenty-six of the enemy. It was most distinctly laid down that the lee line was to begin the action, and that his own first care would be to prevent the enemy's van interfering with the attack on their rear.

No clearer exposition of tactical principles was ever penned; and though, under the force of circumstances, some of the details prescribed in the memorandum were departed from, the leading idea of crushing the enemy's rear with the lee line, and overawing the enemy's van with the weather line, was very exactly adhered to. Between October 9th and 21st, not only Collingwood, but Rear-Admiral Lord Northesk, who commanded in the third post, and the several captains of the fleet were in frequent intercourse with the Commander-in-Chief, and the meaning and spirit of the memorandum were explained and discussed in a friendly manner by word of mouth; so that on the morning of the 21st, when the enemy's fleet was in sight, every officer in command of a ship knew precisely what to expect and what to do. The necessity for many signals was thus entirely done away with, and, so far as ordering the battle was concerned, only three were made, and those within a few minutes of first sighting the enemy's fleet. They were: (1) "Form order of sailing in two columns." (2) "Prepare for battle." (3) "Bear up (in succession) and sail large on the course steered by the Admiral."

The wind was very light at about west-north-west, and as the *Victory* led the way towards the enemy she made all possible sail. The other ships did the same, and the advance to the attack thus became more like a trial of rates of sailing than a formation in precise lines. The lines were, indeed, very irregular; and some of the ships, which had been thrown forward as look-outs, as the *Africa*, or were at a distance from the

main body of the fleet, as the *Prince*, never got into the lines at all.

On the evening of the 20th Villeneuve had formed his fleet in line of battle, heads to the southward, with a reserve squadron to windward. The signal guns and rockets of the English during the night kept him aware of their immediate neighbourhood; and at daylight on the 21st, with their fleet in sight, he repeated the signal for the line of battle on the starboard tack. this the reserve squadron took its station in the van, the Spanish Admiral, Gravina, himself leading, with his flag on board the Principe de Asturias, of 112 guns. As the English advanced, and he saw that in the very light breeze it was impossible to avoid fighting, Villeneuve judged it prudent to lay his ships' heads in the direction of Cadiz, and a little after eight made the signal to wear all together and form line of battle on the port tack. The extreme lightness of the wind, the unskilfulness of the officers, and the want of training and seamanship in his ships' companies, rendered the manœuvre very long. It was not till after ten o'clock that the fleet was formed on the other tack, and then most irregularly, the ships being in some places crowded together, with two or even three abreast, in others separated by wide intervals, and the whole line sagging away to leeward, so as to present a deep crescent rather than any near approach to the ideal line of battle. It is thus impossible to give the exact order of the enemy's ships; but, as nearly as can be, it was the following.

2. Scipion 3. Intrépide 4. Formidable 5. Rayo 6. Duguay-Trouin 7. Mont-Blanc 8. San Francisco de Assisi 8. San Francisco de Assisi 10. Héros 11. Santisima Trinidad 12. Bucentaure 13. Neptune 14. Radoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 10. Fougueux 11. Pluton 12. Algésiras 13. Santama 14. Aigle 15. Swiftsure 16. Argonauta 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueu	Ship.		Guns.	Result of the Battle.		
2. Scipion 3. Intrépide 4. Formidable 5. Rayo 6. Duguay-Trovin 7. Mont-Blanc 8. San Francisco de Assisi 9. San Augustino 11. Santisima Trinidad 12. Bucentaure 13. Neptune 14. Redoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 10. Fougueux 11. Santisima 11. Santisima 12. Bucentaure 12. Bucentaure 13. Neptune 14. Redoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19.	1. Neptuno	s	80	Captured; recaptured Oct.23		
3. Intrépide r 74 4. Formidable r 80 5. Rayo s 100 6. Duguay-Trouin r 74 7. Mont-Blanc r 74 8. San Francisco de Assisi s 74 9. San Augustino s 74 11. Santisima Trinidad s 130 12. Bucentaure r 80 13. Neptune r 80 14. Redoutable r 74 15. San Leandro s 64 16. San Justo s 74 17. Indomptable r 80 18. Santa Ana s 112 19. Fougueux r 74 20. Monarca s 74 21. Pluton r 74 22. Algésiras r 74 23. Bahama s 74 24. Aigle r 74 25. Swiftsure r 74 26. Argonaute r 74 27. Montañes s 74 28. Argonauta s 80 31. San Idefonso s 74 31. San Idefonso s 74 32. Achille r 74 33. San Idefonso s 74 34. Captured; burnt Escaped into Cadiz (Captured; burnt Escaped into Cadiz (Rear-Admiral Cisneros) (Captured; foundered Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz (Vice-Admiral Alava) (Captured; recaptured Oct. 23 Captured; recaptured Captured; recaptured (Captured; recaptured Captured; recaptured Captured; taken to Gibral Escaped into Cadiz (Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; seuttled Captured; seuttled Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; ta		F	74	Captured Nov. 4; sent home		
5. Rayo 5. Rayo 6. Duguay-Trovin 6. Duguay-Trovin 7. Mont-Blanc 8. San Francisco de Assisi 9. San Augustino 10. Héros 11. Santisima Trinidad 12. Bucentaure 13. Neptune 14. Redoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 10. Horos 11. Santisima Trinidad 11. Santisima Trinidad 12. Bucentaure 13. Neptune 14. Redoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Fou		K	74	Captured; burnt ((Rear-Admiral Dumanoir le		
6. Duguay-Trovin F 74	4. Formidable	F	80	Pelley) Captured Nov. 4; sent home		
7. Mont-Blanc F	5. Rayo	S	100	Captured on Oct. 24; wrecked		
7. Mont-Blanc 8. San Francisco de Assist 9. San Augustino 10. Héros 11. Santisima Trinidad 12. Bucentaure 13. Neptune 14. Redoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Bahama 10. Héros 13. Captured; wrecked 13. Vereked on Oct. 24 (Vice-Admiral Villeneuve Escaped into Cadiz Captured; recaptured Oct. 23 Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Escaped into Cadiz Captured; taken to Gibral	6. Duguay-Trouin	F	74	Captured Nov. 4; sent home		
sisi s 74 9. San Augustino s 74 10. Héros F 74 11. Santisima Trinidad s 130 12. Bucentaure F 80 13. Neptune F 80 14. Redoutable F 74 15. San Leandro S 64 16. San Justo S 74 17. Indomptable F 80 18. Santa Ana S 112 19. Fougueux F 74 20. Monarca S 74 21. Pluton F 74 22. Algésiras F 74 24. Aigle F 74 25. Swiftsure F 74 26. Argonaute F 74 27. Montañes S 74 28. Argonauta S 80 29. Berwick F 74 30. San Juan Nepomuceon S 74 31. San Ildefonso S 74 32. Achille F 74 Captured; wrecked Captured; recaptured Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Escaped into Cadiz (Rear-Admiral Magon) Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; seuttled Captured; seuttled Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; seuttled Captured; seuttled Captured; seuttled Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; seuttled Captured; taken to Gibral Cap			74	Captured Nov. 4; sent home		
9. San Augustino s 74 Captured; burnt Escaped into Cadiz (Rear-Admiral Cisneros) Captured; coundered (Vice-Admiral Villeneuve Captured; wrecked Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Captured; foundered Escaped into Cadiz Captured; foundered Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Captured; recaptured Captured; recaptured Captured; recaptured Captured; recaptured Captured; recaptured Captured; recaptured Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Captured; taken to Gibral Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Captured; taken to Gibral Escaped into Cadiz Escaped	8. San Francisco de A	S-				
10. Héros	sisi	S	74	Wrecked on Oct. 23		
10. Héros F 74 11. Santisima Trinidad s 130 12. Bucentaure F 80 13. Neptune F 80 14. Redoutable F 74 15. San Leandro S 64 16. San Justo S 74 17. Indomptable F 80 18. Santa Ana S 112 19. Fougueux F 74 20. Monarca S 74 21. Pluton F 74 22. Algésiras F 74 23. Bahama S 74 24. Aigle F 74 25. Swiftsure F 74 26. Argonaute F 74 27. Montañes S 74 28. Argonauta S 80 39. Berwick F 74 30. San Juan Nepomuceno S 74 31. San Ildefonso S 74 32. Achille F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; Taptured; Taptured; Taptured; Ta	9. San Augustino	S	74	Captured : burnt		
11. Santisima Trinidad s  12. Bucentaure  13. Neptune  14. Redoutable  15. San Leandro  16. San Justo  17. Indomptable  18. Santa Ana  19. Fougueux  19. Fougueux  19. Fougueux  19. Fougueux  10. Monarca  10. Monarca  10. San Justo  11. Indomptable  12. Algésiras  13. Bahama  14. Aigle  15. Swiftsure  16. San Justo  17. Indomptable  18. Santa Ana  19. Fougueux  10. Fougueux  10. Fougueux  11. Fougueux  12. Algésiras  13. Bahama  14. Aigle  15. Swiftsure  16. San Juan Nepomuceon  17. Indomptable  18. Captured; recaptured  18. Captured; wrecked  18. Captured; wrecked  18. Captured; taken to Gibral  18. Santa Ana  19. Captured; taken to Gibral  19. Captured; scuttled  10. Captured; wrecked  10. Captured; taken to Gibral  11. Captured; taken to Gibral  12. Captured; taken to Gibral  13. San Ildefonso  14. Captured; taken to Gibral  15. Captured; taken to Gibral  16. San Juan Nepomuceon  17. Indomptable  18. Santa Ana  19. Fougueux  10. Captured; wrecked  10. Captured; taken to Gibral  10. Captured; taken to Gibral  10. Captured; taken to Gibral  11. Captured; taken to Gibral  12. Captured; taken to Gibral  13. San Ildefonso  14. Captured; wrecked  15. San Ildefonso  16. San Juan Nepomuceon  17. Indomptable  18. Santa Ana  19. Fougueux  19. Fougueux  10. Captured; wrecked  10. Captured; wrecked  10. Captured; taken to Gibral  10. Captured; wrecked  11. Captured; wrecked  12. Captured; wrecked  13. San Ildefonso  14. Captured; wrecked  15. San Ildefonso  16. San Juan Nepomuceon  17. Fougueux  18. Captured; wrecked  19. Captured; wrecked  19. Captured; wrecked  10. Captured; wrecked  10. Captured; wrec		F	74			
12. Bucentaure F 80 13. Neptune F 80 14. Redoutable F 74 15. San Leandro S 64 16. San Justo S 74 17. Indomptable F 80 18. Santa Ana S 112 19. Fougueux F 74 20. Monarca S 74 21. Pluton F 74 22. Algésiras F 74 24. Aigle F 74 25. Swiftsure F 74 26. Argonaute F 74 27. Montañes S 74 28. Argonauta S 80 29. Berwick F 74 30. San Juan Nepomucce S 74 31. San Ildefonso S 74 32. Achille F 74 34. Captured; foundered (Vice-Admiral Villeneuve (Captured; foundered Escaped into Cadiz (Vice-Admiral Alava) 4. Captured; recaptured (Oct. 23 4. Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Escaped into Cadiz (Rear-Admiral Magon) 4. Captured; retaken by created to Gibral Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; souttled Captured; wrecked Captured; seuttled Captured; wrecked Captured; seuttled Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; taken to G	11 0		100			
12. Bucentaure  13. Neptune 14. Redoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Captured; recaptured 19. Captured; wrecked 19. Captured; wrecked 19. Captured; taken to Gibral 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Captured; taken to Gibral 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Captured; taken to Gibral 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Captured; taken to Gibral 19. Captured; wrecked 19. Captured; taken to Gibral 19. Captured; taken to Gibral 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Captured; taken to Gibral	11. Santisima Trinidad	S	130			
13. Neptune F 80 Captured; wrecked 14. Redoutable F 74 Captured; foundered 15. San Leandro S 64 Escaped into Cadiz 16. San Justo S 74 Escaped into Cadiz 17. Indomptable F 80 Wrecked on Oct. 24 (Vice-Admiral Alava) 18. Santa Ana S 112 Captured; wrecked 20. Monarca S 74 Captured; wrecked 21. Pluton F 74 Escaped into Cadiz 22. Algésiras F 74 23. Bahama S 74 Captured; wrecked 24. Aigle F 74 Captured; wrecked 25. Swiftsure F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 26. Argonaute F 74 Captured; wrecked 27. Montañes S 74 Captured; wrecked 28. Argonaute F 74 Captured; wrecked 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 20. San Juan Nepomuceno S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 21. San Ildefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 22. Achille F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 23. San Ildefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 24. Achille F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 25. Swiftsure F 75 Captured; wrecked 26. Argonaute F 76 Captured; taken to Gibral 27. Montañes S 77 Captured; taken to Gibral 28. Argonauta S 80 Captured; taken to Gibral 29. Berwick F 75 Captured; taken to Gibral 30. San Ildefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Ildefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up	10 D		0.0			
13. Neptune 14. Redoutable 15. San Leandro 16. San Justo 17. Indomptable 18. Santa Ana 18. Santa Ana 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 19. Fougueux 10. Monarca 10. Monarca 10. Monarca 10. San Justo 10. Monarca 10. Monarca 10. Monarca 10. Monarca 10. Monarca 10. San Justo 10. Monarca 10. Captured; wrecked 10. Captured; taken to Gibral 10. Monarca 10	12. Bucentaure	F	80			
14. Redoutable	13. Nentune	F	80			
15. San Leandro s   64   Escaped into Cadiz   16. San Justo s   74   Escaped into Cadiz   17. Indomptable		F				
16. San Justo s 74 Escaped into Cadiz Wrecked on Oct. 24  18. Santa Ana s 112 (Vice-Admiral Alava) Captured; recaptured Oct. 23  19. Fougueux F 74 Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz (Rear-Admiral Magon) Captured; retaken by created to a fixed the fixed captured and the fixed captur						
17. Indomptable  18. Santa Ana  19. Fougueux  19. Fougueux  19. Fougueux  10. Monarca  21. Pluton  10. Fougueux  10. Santa Ana  11. Santa Ana						
18. Santa Ana  s 112						
19. Fougueux F 74 Captured; wrecked 20. Monarca S 74 Captured; wrecked 21. Pluton F 74 Escaped into Cadiz 22. Algésiras F 74 (Rear-Admiral Magon) 23. Bahama S 74 Captured; retaken by cre 24. Aigle F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 25. Swiftsure F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 26. Argonaute F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 27. Montañes S 74 Captured; captured; 28. Argonauta S 80 Captured; scuttled 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 30. San Juan Nepomuceno S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Ildefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up	-			((Vice-Admiral Alava)		
20. Monarca   S   74   Captured; wrecked	18. Santa Ana	s	112			
20. Monarca   S   74   Captured; wrecked	19. Fougueux	F	74	Captured : wrecked		
21. Pluton F 74 Escaped into Cadiz (Rear-Admiral Magon) 22. Algésiras F 74 Captured; retaken by cre 23. Bahama s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 24. Aigle F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 25. Swiftsure F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 26. Argonaute F 74 Escaped into Cadiz Captured; taken to Gibral Escaped into Cadiz Captured; taken to Gibral Escaped into Cadiz Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; wrecked Captured; taken to Gibral	20. Monarca	S	74			
23. Bahama s 74 Captured; retaken by created and a state of the state	21. Pluton	F	74	Escaped into Cadiz		
23. Bahama s 74 Captured; retaken by created and a state of the state	00 470/0000	**	7.4	((Rear-Admiral Magon)		
23. Bahama s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 24. Aigle F 74 Captured; wrecked 25. Swiftsure F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 26. Argonaute F 74 Escaped into Cadiz 27. Montañes S 74 Escaped into Cadiz 28. Argonauta S 80 Captured; scuttled 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 30. San Juan Nepomuceno S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Ildefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up	22. Aigestras	F.	14	Captured ; retaken by crew		
24. Aigle	23. Bahama	S	74	Captured; taken to Gibraltar		
25. Swiftsure F 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 26. Argonaute F 74 Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Captured; scuttled Captured; wrecked San Juan Nepomuceeno S 74 Captured; wrecked San Ilaan Ildefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; taken to Cadiz Escaped into Cadiz Esc	24. Aigle	F	74			
26. Argonaute F 74 Escaped into Cadiz 27. Montañes S 74 Escaped into Cadiz 28. Argonauta S 80 Captured; scuttled 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 30. San Juan Nepomuceno S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Idefonso S 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up		F	74	Captured; taken to Gibraltar		
27. Montanes s 74 Escaped into Cadiz 28. Argonauta s 80 Captured; scuttled 29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 30. San Juan Nepomuceno s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Ildefonso s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up		F	74			
28. Argonauta s 80 Captured; scuttled Captured; wrecked 30. San Juan Nepomuceno s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Ildefonso s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up		S	74			
29. Berwick F 74 Captured; wrecked 30. San Juan Nepomu- ceno s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Ildefonso s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up	28. Argonauta	S	80			
30. San Juan Nepomuceno s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 31. San Idefonso s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up						
ceno s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; taken to Gibral Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up				, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,		
31. San Ildefonso s 74 Captured; taken to Gibral 32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up	1		74	Captured : taken to Gibraltar		
32. Achille F 74 Caught fire and blew up	31. San Ildefonso					
33. Principe de Asturias s 112 { (Vice-Admiral Gravina) Escaped into Cadiz		_		(Vice-Admiral Gravina)		

Five frigates, Cornélie, Hermione, Hortense, Rhin, Thémis, and the brigs Argus and Furet, all French, were ranged on the lee side of the line, at some distance, and had no part in the action.

Similarly, though from a different reason, as already explained, the order of the English ships cannot be exactly given, though, with some exceptions, the following is something like it.

### WEATHER LINE.

Ch.i.e.	Guns.	Captain.	Loss in the Battle.		
Ship. Gun		Captain.	K.	w.	Total.
1. Victory	100	T. M. Hardy (Vice - Admiral Lord Nelson— killed)	57	102	159
2. Téméraire	98	E. Harvey	47	76	123
3. Neptune	98	T. F. Fremantle	10	34	44
4. Leviathan	74	H. W. Bayntun	4	22	26
5. Conqueror	74	Israel Pellew	3	9	12
6. Britannia	100	C. Bullen (Rear - Admiral Lord Northesk)	10	42	52
7. Agamemnon	64	Sir E. Berry	2	8	10
8. Ajax	74	Lieut. J. Pilfold	2	9	11
9. Orion	74	E. Codrington	1	23	24
10. Minotaur	74	C. J. M. Mans- field	3	22	25
11. Spartiate	74	Sir F. Laforey	3	20	23
12. (Africa)	64	H. Digby	18	44	62
		Carried forward	160	411	571

LEE LINE.

Ship.	Guns.	Captain.	Loss in the Battle.		
Marp.	;	Сарчаш,	K.	w.	Total.
		Brought forward	160	411	571
1. Royal Sove-	100	E. Rotheram	47	94	141
reign		(Vice - Admiral Collingwood)			
2. Belleisle	74	W. Hargood	33	93	126
3. Mars	74	G. Duff-killed	29	69	98
4. Tonnant	80	C. Tyler	26	50	76
5. Bellerophon	74	J. Cooke-killed	27	123	150
6. Colossus	74	J. N. Morris	40	160	200
7. Achille	74	R. King	13	59	72
8. Dreadnought	98	J. Conn	7	26	33
9. Polyphemus	64	R. Redmill	2	4	6
10. Revenge	74	R. Moorsom	28	51	79
11. Swiftsure	74	W. G. Rutherford	9	8	17
12. Defiance	74	P. C. Durham	17	53	70
13. Thunderer	74	Lieut. J. Stock-l	4	12	16
14. (Prince)	98	R. Grindall			
15. Defence	74	G. Hope	7	29	36
		Total	449	1242	1691

The frigates Euryalus (Captain H. Blackwood), Naiad (T. Dundas), Phobe (T. B. Capel, and Sirius (W. Prowse), with the schooner Pickle (Lieut. J. R. Lapenotiere), and cutter Entreprenance (Lieut. R. B. Young), were present to windward of the weather column, but took no part in the battle.

It had been laid down by Lord Nelson in his memorandum of October 9th, that, if the fleet should be to windward of the enemy, it would be his aim to bring it, in three lines, parallel to and within gunshot of the enemy; from which position the lee line would bear up all together and fall on the enemy's rear, while the weather line and advance squadron threatened the van,

until such time as it seemed expedient for them also to bear up and fall on the enemy's centre. The extreme lightness of the wind, however, rendered it quite impossible to get into the prescribed position without risking the loss of the whole day and of the opportunity to engage at all. This contingency had no doubt been discussed by Nelson in the days preceding the battle, so that the modification in the Admiral's plan was at once understood. Ideally, the English fleet was in two lines perpendicular to the enemy's one line; actually, the lines on both sides were extremely irregular, and on the part of the English were rather elongated clusters.

Having thus seen all things arranged as was best suited to the circumstances, Nelson went down to his cabin and entered in his diary a brief note of the occurrences of the morning. Then, on his knees, he added:—"May the great God whom I worship grant to my country and for the benefit of Europe in general a great and glorious victory; and may no misconduct in any one tarnish it; and may humanity after victory be the predominant feature in the British fleet. For myself, individually, I commit my life to Him who made me, and may His blessing light upon my endeavours for serving my country faithfully. To Him I resign myself and the just cause which is intrusted to me to defend."

He afterwards wrote, or at any rate signed, in the presence of Blackwood and Hardy, that remarkable document which has been called the codicil to his will, in which he briefly stated the services which, as he had been led to believe, Lady Hamilton had rendered to the country. She had obtained, he said, in 1796 the King of Spain's letter to the King of Naples acquaint-

ing him of his intention to declare war against England, and had thus been able to give timely warning to the English Ministry; and in 1798, she had, by her "influence with the Queen of Naples, caused letters to be wrote to the Governor of Syracuse, that he was to encourage the fleet being supplied with everything, should they put into any port in Sicily." As it had not been in his power to reward these services, "I leave," he wrote, "Emma, Lady Hamilton, a legacy to my King and country, that they will give her an ample provision to maintain her rank in life. I also leave to the beneficence of my country my adopted daughter, Horatia Nelson Thompson; and I desire she will use in future the name of Nelson only. These are the only favours I ask of my King and country at this moment when I am going to fight their battle."

The approach towards the enemy's line was necessarily slow; at first it was not more than three knots an hour, and as the breeze got lighter even this rate was lessened. About eleven o'clock, the fleets being then little more than two miles apart, Nelson, rightly interpreting the manœuvre which the combined fleet had so clumsily executed, telegraphed to Collingwood, "I intend to push through the enemy's line to prevent them from getting into Cadiz"; and half an hour later he made the celebrated signal, "ENGLAND EXPECTS THAT EVERY MAN WILL DO HIS DUTY." It is said that, as he saw the flags going up, Collingwood remarked half-peevishly to his flag-lieutenant, "I wish Nelson would make no more signals; we all understand what we have to do." When, however, the signal was reported, he was delighted, and ordered it to be

announced to the ship's company, by whom it was received with the greatest enthusiasm. On board most of the ships of the fleet it was similarly announced and similarly received; but in some the captains thought it unnecessary, and nothing was said about it.

The modification of the plan of attack, which the circumstances of the weather had rendered necessary, was not allowed to affect the essential part of it. Collingwood, at the head of the lee line, was still to lead through the enemy's rear; Nelson, at the head of the weather line, was still to take care that Collingwood was not interrupted. It was thus not by accident, nor by better sailing, nor by more careful trimming of sails, to all of which it has been assigned, but in accordance with the prearranged plan, that the Royal Sovereign was considerably ahead of the Victory as, closely followed by the Belleisle, Mars, Tonnant, and the rest, she steered straight for the rear division of the combined fleet. It was about noon when she entered between the horns of the crescent, bringing the enemy's van and rear equally abaft the beam. Immediately in front of her was the Santa Ana, with the flag of Vice-Admiral Alava, close astern of which was the Fougueux. The San Leandro, San Justo, and Indomptable ought to have been ahead of the Santa Ana; but they had fallen considerably to leeward, and their guns were thus to a great extent masked by the Santa Ana herself, when the Spanish Vice-Admiral opened his fire on the Royal Sovereign.

His doing so was the signal for the ships of both fleets to hoist their colours, the English all flying the white ensign, to avoid the confusion which Nelson thought might arise from the use of different flags; for while he himself was Vice-Admiral and Lord Northesk Rear-Admiral of the White, Collingwood was Vice-Admiral of the Blue. In addition to the ensign, each ship flew two or more union-jacks in different parts of the rigging. The Admirals wore their proper flags; and at the Victory's maintopgallant mast-head was the signal, "Engage the enemy more closely."

The advance of the English ships had by this time become extremely slow, and for full twenty minutes the Royal Sovereign was under the direct fire of the Santa Ana and Fouqueux, and more partially under that of four or five other ships. She ought to have been beaten into matches, but so bad was the enemy's gunnery practice that she sustained no loss of any importance; none at all, indeed, beyond what drew from Collingwood the sorrowing cry: "Oh dear, oh dear! I forgot to shift that new foretopsail. It won't be worth anything after this." But about twenty minutes after noon she passed slowly under the stern of the Santa Ana across the bows of the Fouqueux. The first gun she fired was a 68-pounder carronade on the port side of the forecastle. This was loaded with one round shot and a keg of five hundred musket-bullets, and was now discharged slap into the stern of the Santa Ana. A second or two later the starboard carronade, loaded in the same way, was discharged into the bows of the Fouqueux. In slow succession, each gun as it bore, all loaded with two round shot, some with three, was fired into the stern of the Santa Ana or the bows of the Fouqueux. As she drew clear, the Royal Sovereign's helm was put hard a-starboard and she shot up alongside of the Santa Ana, where she engaged her broadside to broadside, at the distance of

only a few yards. In this position, however, she was exposed to the fire of the San Leandro, San Justo, Indomptable and Fouqueux; but, whether from their fear of hitting the Santa Ana or from the actual badness of their gunnery, her loss, though severe, was nothing like so great as might have been expected. In a few minutes the Belleisle took the extreme pressure off her: hauling up a little as she passed under the Santa Ana's stern, she fired her port broadside into the Spaniard's starboard quarter; a minute or two later she passed close under the stern of the Indomptable, raking her with terrible effect, and on the Indomptable's hastily bearing up, she engaged the Fouqueux, and afterwards the Aigle, Achille, and Neptune. A reference to the original positions of these three ships will show how extreme was the confusion in the allies' line of battle. Still the Belleisle suffered most severely, losing all three masts and bowsprit and one hundred and twenty-six men killed and wounded.

Meantime Nelson, with the weather line, was occupied in providing that Collingwood should not be interrupted. He thought it not improbable that, so soon as the plan of the English attack was seen and understood, the allies' van might wear to the assistance of the centre and rear; and accordingly, as he approached their line, he hauled up a little as though intending to range along and attack the van. Rear-Admiral Dumanoir, commanding the head of the enemy's line, so interpreted the manœuvre, or, at least, said that he did; though, as the enemy's line was by the wind, and the *Victory* never took in her studding-sails, it is difficult to understand how he could have been deceived by the very palpable feint. All that

Nelson wished, however, was gained; and, keeping away again, he steered for the centre of the line.

Here was the huge Santisima Trinidad of 130 guns, commonly spoken of as a four-decker. She was, in fact, a three-decker, with guns along the gangways; but was by far the largest ship then affoat. She was, however, a Spaniard, and carried only a rear-admiral's flag. Nelson was anxious to match himself against Villeneuve, who, he was convinced, was near the centre; but among the number of tricolours displayed Villeneuve's flag could not be made out, and chance, rather than judgment, determined the place through which the Victory passed. Captain Hardy represented to Nelson that the enemy's ships were so crowded at the point abreast them that it was impossible to go through without fouling some one or other. "It does not signify which we run on board of," answered Nelson. "Go on board which you please; take your choice."

The Victory had all this time been sustaining the fire of the Bucentaure, Santisima Trinidad, and the ships ahead and astern of these. When yet nearly a mile distant, the Bucentaure fired a trial shot, which fell short; a few minutes later another, and then others, till at last, one going through the Victory's main-topgallant sail, gave the enemy a visible proof that their shot would reach. Then every ship that could bring a gun to bear opened fire. But though they made a great deal of noise and smoke, and though the shot fell thick all around, comparatively few struck the Victory, which on her part reserved her fire, though one or two of her foremost guns were discharged accidentally, or without orders. For nearly half an hour she was exposed to this heavy

fire. The secretary, Dr. Scott, standing by Nelson's side, was killed by a round-shot; another passed between Nelson and Captain Hardy. A double-headed shot swept away eight marines drawn up on the poop; the rest were immediately ordered down, and dispersed round the ship. The mizen-topmast was shot away about two-thirds of the way up; the fore-sail and fore-topsail were in ribbons; the wheel was knocked to pieces. But this, with some fifty men in all killed or wounded, was the full amount of loss sustained by the *Victory* from this tremendous cannonade.

At last, a little before one, she passed under the stern of the Bucentaure, so close that her main yard-arm fouled the Bucentaure's vangs. Her fire was delivered in exactly the same way as the Royal Sovereign's. The 68-pounder carronade on the port side of the forecastle was the first gun, and its charge of a round-shot and a keg of five hundred musket-bullets was discharged into the Bucentaure's cabin windows. As she slowly moved ahead, every one of the fifty guns on her broadside, all double, some treble shotted, was deliberately discharged in the same manner. It was said afterwards by the Bucentaure's officers that twenty of her guns were dismounted and nearly four hundred of her men killed or wounded by this one terrible broadside.

On the other hand, the moment the *Victory's* bows opened clear of the *Bucentaure's* stern, she was exposed to the direct fire of the *Neptune* and *Redoutable*. But this, however well intended, was harmless in comparison with the *Victory's*; and though at such a short distance it was impossible to help sometimes hitting such a huge target as a three-decker, the greater number of the shot

were scattered about through her rigging, and but few struck the hull or caused any loss to the crew. It was probably Hardy's intention, after drawing clear of the Bucentaure, to range up on her starboard beam, as the Royal Sovereign had done to the Santa Ana. If so, however, he was unable to execute it; for the Redoutable had closed up to such a degree that, whether accidentally or of set purpose, the two ships fell foul of each other, the starboard bow of the Victory striking the port bow of the Redoutable; and her foreyard catching in the Redoutable's rigging, the two ships fell alongside each other and so remained.

The steady fire from the Victory's lower and middle decks drove the Redoutable's men from their guns; but above, the advantage was with the French. Nelson, who had twice seen a French ship destroyed by fire, was keenly sensible of the danger of combustibles in the tops, and had strictly forbidden their use. The Victory's tops were thus unarmed; those of the Redoutable, on the contrary, were full of men, and their musketry and coehorns cleared the Victory's forecastle and upper deck. This gave the Frenchmen the idea of boarding and possibly capturing the Victory, thus taken at a disadvantage; but seeing them crowding in the gangway, Mr. Wilmot, the boatswain of the Victory, fired the starboard forecastle carronade into the thick of them. Loaded as the other had been, it caused terrible havoc, and for the moment they fell back. The musketry fire from the Redoutable's tops, however, continued; and about twenty minutes past one a chance shot from her mizen-top struck Nelson on the left shoulder as he stood near the hatchway, facing aft. The bullet passed down through the epaulette, through the lungs, through the spine, and lodged in the muscles of the back. He fell, on the very same spot where his secretary had been killed shortly before. As Captain Hardy attempted to raise him, he said, "They've done for me at last, Hardy." "I hope not," answered Hardy. "Yes," replied Nelson, "my backbone is shot through." He was carried below; but, though from the first the wound was recognised as mortal, he did not die for more than three hours. His fall was speedily avenged; for though it was not known who fired the fatal shot, not a man came out of the *Redoutable's* mizen-top alive.

The French musketry, however, was at this time very deadly. Within a few minutes after Nelson's fall, several other officers of the Victory and about forty men were killed or wounded, and her upper deck was so far cleared that Captain Lucas of the Redoutable again thought that a determined effort to board might be successful. But both ships, and more especially the Victory, tumbled home so much, that, while at the water-line they were grinding against each other, at the upper deck they were many feet apart, and to pass from one to the other was no easy matter. A few men did, indeed, scramble on to the Victory's quarter-deck, but were at once repulsed, though the doing so again exposed the Victory's people to the deadly French musketry, and several of them, including Captain Adair of the marines, were shot down. Lucas had meantime lowered the main-yard to serve as a bridge, and his men were swarming on the quarter-deck and forecastle, waiting for the moment to cross over, when the Téméraire, coming under

her starboard quarter, swept them away with a terrible raking broadside, which, it is said, killed or wounded upwards of two hundred men. The effect was decisive; all power of resistance was beaten out of her, and when the *Téméraire* ran on board her on the starboard side, she struck her flåg and was quietly taken possession of. Her loss in killed and wounded was returned as five hundred and twenty-two out of a complement of six hundred and forty-three.

The Redoutable was scarcely secured, and the Victory was still in the act of disengaging herself from her, when the Fougueux, which had been already very roughly handled by the Royal Sovereign and the leading ships of the lee division, appeared through the smoke on the Téméraire's starboard quarter. When within a few vards distant, she received the Téméraire's starboard broadside double-shotted. Not a gun could miss its mark. In the smoke and confusion she fell on board the Téméraire, and was immediately lashed by her fore-rigging to the Téméraire's spare anchor. A small party of men under the first-lieutenant, Mr. Kennedy, sprang on board; the feeble resistance was at once overpowered, and her flag was hauled down a few minutes before two o'clock; she is said to have had more than four hundred men killed or wounded.

The Victory had meanwhile cleared herself from the group, and was standing towards the north as well as her crippled state would permit. The Téméraire lay for a considerable time entangled between the two prizes, and with the wreck of the Redoutable's mizen-mast across her quarter-deck; but, except in firing an occasional gun at long range, there was no further fighting for either Victory

or Téméraire. For, in fact, the battle was by this time practically over.

It is impossible to describe the action of each ship in detail. The smoke and the confusion of lines were so great that even at the time individual ships had not always a very clear idea of what ships they were engaged with, and still less of what other ships were doing. The various accounts which have come down to us are thus extremely confused or even contradictory; and the attempt to disentangle them can lead to no quite satisfactory result. It is enough to say that, once the heads of the English columns were well engaged, the other ships made no pretence of keeping their line, further than they were compelled by the faintness of the breeze and by their rate of sailing. Each made the best of her way towards the enemy's line, and fell on such of the enemy's ships as she happened to meet with. But the dominating plan given out by Nelson, and now carried into effect by Collingwood and himself, ensured the English being present on the immediate scene of action in superior force. The number of ships of the line in the allied fleet was thirty-three; but the ten in the van were virtually excluded from the fight, and the other twentythree were brought into it only by degrees as the English ships came up.

There is no doubt that, under any conditions of weather, and more especially in the very light breeze which actually prevailed, the advance of the English columns would have been extremely dangerous had the enemy had more efficient gunners. But the low state of gunnery in both French and Spanish navies was perfectly well known to Nelson, and was an important

item in his calculation; otherwise he would scarcely have placed the Royal Sovereign and Victory in positions where they must be knocked to pieces without the chance of firing a shot. Even as it was, it will be seen in the table on pages 218-19 how severe was the loss of the two headmost ships in each column in comparison with that of the other ships. The number of killed and wounded in these four, the Victory and Téméraire, Royal Sovereign and Belleisle, together with that in the Bellerophon and Colossus, the fifth and sixth ships in the lee line, was considerably more than the half of that in the whole fleet. But, this danger once passed, the advantage was wholly with the English, who could and did oppose two or three or four ships to one of the enemy, sometimes at once, sometimes in rapid succession, till that one and the rest, one by one, yielded to overpowering numbers. And thus, within two hours from the time the Royal Sovereign fired her broadside into the stern of the Santa Ana, the victory was assured.

The Santa Ana, raked in succession by the Belleisle and other ships as they passed in, closely engaged the whole time by the Royal Sovereign, having lost all her masts and with half her men killed or wounded, struck her flag about a quarter-past two. Vice-Admiral Alava was himself severely wounded, and was allowed to remain on board the Santa Ana. Other ships, French and Spanish, were similarly overpowered by numbers. The Monarca, Bahama, Algésiras, Swiftsure, Berwick, and many others, were terribly beaten, and lost some three or four hundred men each before they struck their colours. But the odds were everywhere against them. Here, out of many, are two instances. The Bucentaure,

after the first terrible broadside from the Victory which virtually sealed her fate, was successively engaged by the Neptune, Leviathan, and Conqueror, to which last she struck her colours. Captain Atcherley, of the marines, with five men, was sent in a boat to take possession; and to him, on the Bucentaure's quarter-deck, the French Commander - in - Chief and his staff offered their swords. Atcherlev, however, considered it unbecoming for him to receive the submission of an officer of Villeneuve's rank, and took him, with the first and second captains, in his boat to return to the Conqueror. But the Conqueror had made sail in search of a fresh antagonist, and the illustrious prisoners were taken on board the Mars, where they remained. The Neptune, followed by the Leviathan and afterwards by the Conqueror, had meanwhile engaged the Santisima Trinidad, which had already suffered severely from the more distant port broadside of the Victory. At about half-past two she was completely dismasted, and took no further part in the fight, but was not actually taken possession of till three hours later.

All this time the ships in the allied van made no movement to support their centre and rear. It was not till two o'clock and after Villeneuve had repeatedly signalled to them, that they began to wear. But the breeze had been gradually dying away, while the swell from the west was still very heavy. It took the ships nearly an hour to get round on to the starboard tack. Some of them were towed round by their boats; the Intrépide fouled the Mont-Blanc, and lost her foremast. And when they were at last round, Dumanoir in the Formidable, with four of the others, held a close luff and

stood to windward of the field of battle, while the other five kept away to leeward. Three of them passed to the south-east and joined Gravina. The San Augustino, less fortunate, was brought to close action by the Leviathan, which, after delivering one treble-shotted broadside at less than fifty yards distance, fell on board her and took possession without further resistance. About the same time the Intrépide was brought to action by the little Africa, and detained till the Orion came up. A quarter of an hour later her main and mizen masts went over the side; she had lost two hundred men, killed or wounded. The Ajax and Agamemnon were both drawing near, and she struck her colours. It was then some little time after five o'clock.

Meanwhile, Dumanoir with the other five ships was endeavouring to pass clear to windward. If all the ten ships of the van had kept with him, it is possible that he might have brought them in compact order against the scattered English; and though it cannot be supposed that he could have retrieved the fortune of the day, he might have caused the English some serious loss, and at any rate have enabled some of the beaten ships to effect their escape. When, however, he found himself with only five, his heart failed him: he judged that to plunge into the fight with these would be but to sacrifice them also; and so, interchanging a distant and desultory fire with some of the English ships, he passed away towards the south-west and made good his escape with the four French ships. The fifth, the Spanish Neptuno, whether less weatherly than her consorts, whether through the unwillingness of her captain to withdraw from the battle before it was definitely lost, or through his want of decision, fell considerably to leeward, and was brought to action by the *Minotaur* and *Spartiate*, which, being the rearmost ships of the weather line, had not got into action when Dumanoir's movement gave them the chance. They had hauled to the wind on the port tack, but were already too far to leeward to intercept the retreat of the *Formidable* and the other French ships. They were, however, able to engage the *Neptuno*, which, after a gallant defence, struck her flag a little after five o'clock. It seems doubtful whether she or the *Intrépide* was the last to surrender.

This was the end of the battle. Eighteen of the enemy's ships had been captured and the rest had fled. Gravina, whose ship, the *Principe de Asturias*, was terribly shattered, and who was himself mortally wounded, hoisted the signal to rally, and made sail to the northward. Ten other ships gathered round, and with him made good their escape for the time. They were not pursued, for Nelson was no more. After three hours of intense pain and partial unconsciousness, he expired about half-past four, with the ejaculation, "Thank God! I have done my duty."

One incident of the battle still remains to be told. The French Achille had suffered severely in successive engagements with her English namesake, the Belleisle, Swiftsure, and Polyphemus. She had lost her mizen-mast, main-topmast and foreyard; and when, owing, it was supposed, to her swivels or musketry, she caught fire in the fore-top, it was found that her fire-engine had been destroyed and that she was without the means of extinguishing the flames. About half-past four, while her crew were trying to cut away the mast so that it

might fall clear, a broadside from the Prince, just coming into action, shot it away half-way up, so that the flaming top fell into the waist and set fire to the boats and to the ship herself. The Prince fired one or two more broadsides before the helpless state of the Achille became evident. She then wore round, hove to, and sent her boats to endeavour to save the lives of the men. The Swiftsure did the same. It was a service of no little danger, for the Achille's guns were loaded and went off as the flames reached them. Some two hundred of her men had been rescued when, about a quarter to six, the fire reached her magazine and she blew up, with the loss of all still surviving. It appears doubtful whether she had actually struck her flag or not; and some French writers have prided themselves on the alleged fact of her going down with colours flying. If she did, it was the result of forgetfulness or preoccupation on both sides, and not of any desperate determination on the part of either the officers or men of the Achille. All effort at defence had unquestionably ceased before the Prince sent a boat to her assistance.

About noon, and before the first shot was fired, Nelson had made the general signal, "Prepare to anchor immediately after the close of day." He knew, of course, that many of the ships would be dismasted or crippled: he had no doubt whatever that many of the enemy's ships, in a similar condition, would be in our hands; and a falling barometer seemed to portend bad weather. After he was carried below, the necessity of anchoring was continually present to his mind, and he repeatedly urged it on Hardy, desiring him to see that it was done. When, however, immediately after the firing ceased,

Hardy went on board the Royal Sovereign and acquainted Collingwood with Nelson's death and last wishes, Collingwood exclaimed, "Anchor the fleet! that is the last thing I should have thought of"; and, as the command now devolved on him, he did not anchor. The ships were by this time in thirteen fathoms water, and the westerly swell was setting them slowly towards the shoals of Trafalgar, now only a few miles distant. The wind was gradually freshening, and at the same time backing. By midnight it was blowing hard from about south-south-west, and the ships' heads were laid off shore; but the dismasted and shattered prizes, with only a handful of men on board to navigate them, were at the mercy of the weather, or of the prisoners, who had to be released in order that they might not be drowned like mice in a cage. One of the prizes was thus retaken; others, having drifted near Cadiz, were retaken by a bold sortie of the enemy, who, however, lost more than they gained; some were wrecked; many were scuttled and sunk to avoid greater risk; and thus it happened that of all the ships captured on the 21st, four only were taken to Gibraltar as trophies of the victory, and these by a cruel chance were all old and worthless.

The effective trophies were supplied by Dumanoir's four ships which escaped to the south-west. After making a good offing, they turned to the north, hoping to reach Brest or one of the ports in the bay. They had all sustained some damage, which, though not serious, was more than might have been supposed, considering the very partial way in which they had been engaged. Their masts were more or less wounded, and they were making water at such a rate as to need to keep the

pumps going. The Formidable had been obliged to throw twelve of her guns overboard: three others had been dismounted at Trafalgar. Off Cape Ortegal, on November 4th, they fell in with a squadron of four ships of the line and four heavy frigates under the command of Sir Richard Strachan in the Casar, and were captured without much difficulty. They were all added to the English navy; one of them, the Duguay-Trouin, whose name was changed to Implacable, is still afloat at Devonport, where she is used as a training-ship for boys.

From the purely naval point of view, then, the result of the Battle of Trafalgar may be stated thus.

SHIPS OF THE LINE OF BATTLE.

	PRESENT	IN THE ACTIO	N.			
French.	S	panish.	То	Total.		
18		15		33		
	How	DISPOSED OF.				
		French.	Spanish.	Total.		
Captured on 21st Recaptured on 22nd Recaptured on 23rd Leaving prizes Captured on 24th Wrecked on 24th Captured on Nov. 4th In Cadiz		9 1  8  1 4 5	9  2 7 1 1  6	 15 1 2 4 11		
				33		

Those in Cadiz were all much shattered, quite unfit for service, and were never at sea again as ships of war.

The Battle of Trafalgar thus completely broke up the threatening coalition of France and Spain which Bonaparte had formed against us. Any further prosecution of his scheme for the invasion of England was rendered impossible, and was, in fact, never again thought of. The naval power of France was, for the time, completely broken; and during the rest of the war, which lasted for another ten years, the command of the sea was held by us in a grip which the enemy scarcely attempted to dispute. That is the historical importance of the battle; but of almost greater importance are the lessons it conveys to the modern successors of those who so nobly fought and conquered ninety years ago. There is a widespread notion that, grand as was this masterpiece of our greatest sailor, the times, and with them the art of navigation and of naval war, have so changed, that we may admire but cannot find anything to imitate. This would seem to spring out of some idea that the principles of war depend on the accidents of the age rather than on the immutable laws of nature. But so long as seas roll and men live, so long will skill, temper, and courage control the mere accessories of ships and guns, of sails or engines.

The rest may be told in very few words. Colling-wood's despatches reached the Admiralty early on the morning of November 6th, and the Park and Tower guns announced the victory to the public; but as the story was read in the *Gazette* on the same day, the splendour of the achievement was almost forgotten in grief for the loss which England had sustained. Such honours and rewards as the Crown and a grateful country could bestow were freely given to the hero's

family. On November 9th his brother William was gazetted as Earl Nelson of Trafalgar, with remainder to the heirs-male successively of his sisters Mrs. Bolton and Mrs. Matcham; and in the course of the following session the House of Commons liberally endowed the title, gave £15,000 to each of the sisters, and £2000 a year for life to Lady Nelson; and to her, as well as to the Earl as an heirloom, the Patriotic Fund voted a vase of the value of £500. It was noticed at the time, and has often been commented on since, that no attention was paid to the so-called codicil in favour of Lady Hamilton. It has been maintained that it was the duty of the country to provide for her, not only as the woman whom he addressed as his dear wife in the sight of Heaven, but also as the woman who had rendered great and important services to the State. But the Government knew, what has been made public only within the last few years, that Nelson was entirely deceived as to Lady Hamilton's alleged services, which existed, indeed, only in her own imagination; they knew also that she was left well provided for both by her husband's will and by Nelson's. They may reasonably have thought that £2000 a year was a sufficient income for such a woman. She, however, speedily ran through it, was imprisoned for debt, was released by private charity, and during her last years was dependent on the interest of the £4000 settled on her daughter Horatia. She resided in Calais, in humble cirumstances but by no means in absolute want; became a Roman Catholic,possibly a sincere one; and dying at Calais in 1815, was buried there in accordance with the rites of the Catholic Church.

The Victory, with Nelson's body on board, arrived at Spithead on December 5th, and was sent round to the The body was then taken to Greenwich Hospital, where, in the Painted Hall, it lay in state from January 4th to the 8th, to be visited and wept over by thousands. On the 8th it was conveyed in a solemn procession of boats to Whitehall Stairs; thence on foot to the Admiralty; and the next day to St. Paul's. where it was placed in the crypt, in a sarcophagus made at the cost of Cardinal Wolsey for Henry the Eighth. Above, in the cathedral, is a monument by Flaxman. Other monuments were erected by scores through the country; scarcely a town of any size but has one. But the truest, the noblest, the grandest monument is in the hearts of the English people, where, purified from all earthly taint, his memory lives enshrined as the ideal of heroism, of self-sacrifice, and of duty.

THE END

# English Men of Action Series

Crown 8vo. Cloth. With Portraits. 2s. 6d. each

COLIN CAMPBELL. By ARCHIBALD FORBES.

CLIVE. By Sir CHARLES WILSON.

CAPTAIN COOK. By Sir WALTER BESANT.

DAMPIER. By W. CLARK RUSSELL.

DRAKE. By JULIAN CORBETT.

DUNDONALD. By the Hon. J. W. FORTESCUE.

GENERAL GORDON. By Sir W. BUTLER.

WARREN HASTINGS. By Sir A. LYALL.

SIR HENRY HAVELOCK. By Archibald Forbes.

**HENRY V.** By the Rev. A. J. CHURCH.

LORD LAWRENCE. By Sir RICHARD TEMPLE.

LIVINGSTONE. By THOMAS HUGHES.

MONK. By JULIAN CORBETT.

MONTROSE. By Mowbray Morris.

SIR CHARLES NAPIER. By Sir W. BUTLER.

NELSON. By Sir J. K. LAUGHTON.

PETERBOROUGH. By W. STEBBING.

SIR WALTER RALEIGH. By Sir RENNELL RODD.

RODNEY. By DAVID HANNAY.

CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH. By A. G. BRADLEY.

STRAFFORD. By H. D. TRAILL.

WARWICK, the King-Maker. By C. W. OMAN.

WELLINGTON. By GEORGE HOOPER.

WOLFE. By A. G. BRADLEY.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON

## English Men of Letters

Edited by JOHN MORLEY

Popular Edition. Crown 8vo. Paper Covers, 1s.; Cloth, 1s. 6d. each Library Edition. Crown 8vo. Gilt tops. Flat backs. 2s. net each

ADDISON. By W. J. COURTHOPE. BACON. By Dean CHURCH. BENTLEY. By Sir RICHARD JEBB.
BUNYAN. By J. A. FROUDE.
BURKE. By John Morley.
BURNS. By Principal Shairp. BYRON. By Professor Nichol. CARLYLE. By Professor Nichol. CHAUCER. By Dr. A. W. WARD. COLERIDGE. By H. D. TRAILL. COWPER. By GOLDWIN SMITH. **DEFOE.** By W. MINTO. DE QUINCEY. By Prof. MASSON. DICKENS. By Dr. A. W. WARD.
DRYDEN. By Prof. Saintsbury.
FIELDING. By Austin Dobson. GIBBON. By J. COTTER MORISON. GOLDSMITH. By WILLIAM BLACK. GRAY. By EDMUND GOSSE. HAWTHORNE. By HENRY JAMES. HUME. By Prof. HUXLEY, F.R.S. JOHNSON. By Sir Leslie Stephen, K.C.B.

LAMB, Charles. By Canon AINGER. LANDOR. By SIDNEY COLVIN. LOCKE. By THOMAS FOWLER. MACAULAY. By J. COTTER MORISON. MILTON. By MARK PATTISON. POPE. By Sir LESLIE STEPHEN, K.C.B. SCOTT. By R. H. HUTTON. SHELLEY. By J. A. Symonds. SHERIDAN. By Mrs. OLIPHANT. SIDNEY. By J. A. SYMONDS. SOUTHEY. By Prof. Dowden.
SPENSER. By Dean Church.
STERNE. By H. D. Traill.
SWIFT. By Sir Leslie Stephen, K.C.B. THACKERAY. By ANTHONY TROLLOPE. WORDSWORTH. By F. W. H.

KEATS. By SIDNEY COLVIN.

### NEW SERIES

Myers.

Crown 8vo. Gilt tops. Flat backs. 2s. net each

GEORGE ELIOT. By Sir LESLIE STEPHEN, K.C.B.

HAZLITT. By Augustine Birrell,

MATTHEW ARNOLD. By HER-BERT W. PAUL.

RUSKIN. By Frederic Harrison. TENNYSON. By Sir Alfred LYALL.

RICHARDSON. By AUSTIN DOB-

BROWNING. By G. K. CHES-

CRABBE. By the Rev. Canon AINGER. FANNY BURNEY. By AUSTIN

JEREMY TAYLOR. By EDMUND GOSSE.

ROSSETTI. By A. C. Benson. MARIA EDGEWORTH. By the Hon. EMILY LAWLESS.

HOBBES. By Sir Leslie Stephen, K.C.B.

ADAM SMITH. By FRANCIS W. HIRST.

SYDNEY SMITH. By GEORGE W. E. RUSSELL.

THOMAS MOORE. By STEPHEN GWYNN. ANDREW MARVELL.

By AUGUSTINE BIRRELL, K.C. EDWARD FITZGERALD.  $\mathbf{B}\mathbf{y}$ 

A. C. Benson. SIR THOMAS BROWNE.

By EDMUND GOSSE.

WALTER PATER. By A. C. BENSON. SHAKESPEARE. By Professor

WALTER RALEIGH. JAMES THOMSON.

By G. C MACAULAY.

WILLIAM MORRIS. By ALFRED

MRS. GASKELL. By CLEMENT SHORTER.

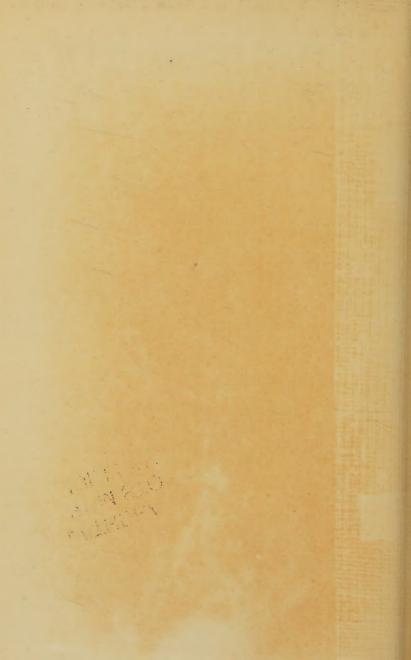
CHARLES KINGSLEY. By G. K. CHESTERTON.

BEN JONSON. By Professor GREGORY SMITH.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON

N. 3.11.08.





MITHDRAWN PROM STOCK VALLIBRARY

